

My Vampire 1151

My Vampire System Chapter 1151: Best babysitter

Layla only noticed that someone had snuck up on her when that person whispered in her ear, and the contents of those words had made a shiver run down her spine. After all, there were only a few who knew of her past, and those that did that had good intentions, wouldn't approach her in such a manner.

She was unsure what to do, should she turn around at that moment? Call for help from her fellow colleagues?

Judging by the way Fex was swinging his head and covering his ears, it didn't seem like he had exactly noticed what was going on and the others also seemed completely focused on spectating the match before Quinn's.

'Can I get their attention somehow, with my ability, maybe I can grab something and hit Fex or Sil.' She thought.

"Don't worry, if I wanted to harm you I would have done so already. I just couldn't help my curiosity. Now why would the daughter of one of Pure's founders be working for the person who had caused her death?" The person asked.

Layla could tell that the voice belonged to a male. Unfortunately there were far too many agents in Pure for her to figure out which one was behind her, with just the voice alone. Although to be this confident, it had to be a high ranking one, at least a numbered agent like herself of the past. For now, she was looking at her surroundings as she tried to come up with a plan in case that mysterious man changed his mind.

"Aren't you the least bit ashamed of yourself? Your 'poor' mother would be rolling around in her grave if she knew. She created Pure for a reason, but I guess by the fact that you are part of a faction of monsters you either don't know about any of that... or you simply don't care!"

The words struck a chord inside Layla.

“You know nothing about my mother!” Layla whispered back in anger, hoping to get the attention of someone, even if it was just one of the Earthborn groups. Something had been pressed against her back since the beginning of their conversation, which was why she didn’t dare to agitate the person behind her too much.

However, listening to these accusations, although they weren’t exactly wrong, she had to stand her ground. “That is something we can agree on. I wasn’t particularly close with your mother so I didn’t know her. However, I know of somebody who was close with her. Agent 2 is on this planet. If you want to know more, why don’t you follow me and ask him. I’m sure he would be happy to welcome back an Ex agent. Especially one with a close connection to our organization as you.” The voice suggested and the next moment, Layla could no longer feel the pressure that was on her back.

She naturally turned around, hoping to look at the man and catch a glimpse of what he looked like, but he was nowhere in her vicinity.

‘If he wasn’t lying and Pure really sent out such a high-ranking single numbered agent, then that means they are putting far more importance into capturing this Demi-god tier beast than we realised. Should I take his word for it? Can I just go off, to find out more about my mother... Agent 2 should be one of the first members of Pure, so he should surely know Mom created Pure in the first place... Can I really go when all of this points to a trap? Or would he hurt me somehow, mother is no longer there and she won’t have the power to protect me anymore. Not that she ever did in the first place.’ Layla was conflicted.

Just then, she saw a hooded man exit the area. He put up one hand and slowly put down a finger, one by one. Layla understood that this was a sign for her that he would leave in a matter of seconds, whether with or without her. However, by following him, she would leave Quinn and the others. Should she ask them to come along?

‘It might be a big trap and if anything happens to me it will just cause more trouble for Quinn, but if Pure is planning to do something to me, he could have just attacked me there. Is there something that my mother still has a play in? did she ask someone to maybe still look out for me?’ She thought.

As the man started to leave, Layla had no choice but to move, still undecided. ‘I’ll contact Quinn through the mask once his match is over, and he can come over then. If I’m there, maybe I can find out more information about the Demi-god tier beast from Pure. Without the need for fighting between the two

groups. I know Quinn is strong, but he isn't the only one Pure is fighting against and I don't want anyone to get hurt if I can stop it.'

This was how Layla justified her action to herself, but in reality she just wanted to know more about her late mother, and Quinn didn't need to be a part of that life. He had done enough for her already. She was also afraid that relying on him like so, would make her appear weak. She didn't need looking after and she didn't want Quinn to always babysit her actions.

However, there was one person who had noticed her leave the scene, and that was Logan who had little interest in the exhibition match.

'Layla, why don't you ask us for help? I know what it feels like to want to do things on your own, but if you go out without telling anyone, it will just worry Quinn all the more. It's dangerous to go alone, especially on an unknown planet.'

Following behind Layla, Logan was sure that something would happen, so he decided to keep up and close, only unlike her who had been pressed for time, he left behind a little spider.

Finally as the match started, the cheers started to die down, and Fex could hear freely again.

"Damn man, who knew a bunch of grown men could scream so high-pitched." Fex mumbled looking around and all he could see was a bored Sil, and Shiro who were by his side looking at the field.

"Hey, where the hell did the other two go?" Fex asked. He then noticed a small spider on the railing jumping up and down. Seeing this, he knew Logan must have left it behind and placed it on his mask.

"Logan, where the hell did you and Layla go?" Fex asked, worried what could be so important they couldn't stay to watch Quinn's match.

"Layla seems to be following someone at the moment, I'm just tagging along for back up. I've left one of my spiders with you. Once Quinn is finished beating the Colonel, just follow the spider to our location." Logan informed him.

“Wait just you two alone, don;t you need my help. What if there;s someone reallys tornng the two of you can;t handle. Do you expect me to just stay here!” Fex started to shout at the railing. The ones close by were looking at him as if he had gone mad, since they were unable to see the spider. Even if they could, they would have thought he had gone crazy.

Regardless, his words had gone unheard for Logan had already ended the call.

‘Should I go anyway, I mean I know Quinn will be able to handle himself, and there are others that can cheer him on.’ Fex thought.

Looking to his left and right, he could see Shiro and Sil, just casually talking to each other. Sil who was an unstable person who could probably destroy the whole shelter if someone got on his bad side, and Shiro who if others knew his ability would try to target him. That’s when Fex realised.

‘Did they just leave me with babysitter duty?’

My Vampire System Chapter 1152: The faction of monsters

There was no need for Logan to completely change into his speed suit, as Layla wasn’t as fast as the other vampires. Changing into another form now would just frighten those she ran past. Right now, she was using Qi on her feet to allow her to run faster to catch up to that mysterious man. Not wanting to fall behind, Logan created a pair of speed boots for himself out of the spiders.

He was keeping up with the girl with relative ease and soon enough he saw who it was she was running after. For Layla to be chasing after someone like so, he could only assume it had something to do with Pure. Eventually, the man had disappeared between two large buildings into a dark alleyway. For a second Layla waited outside of it, she might be desperate for information, but she wasn’t foolish enough to just run in.

‘I know this is a trap... but I need to know why... Why did Mom treat me like a tool for her whole life? It was always ‘for the greater good’ this, and ‘for the sake of Pure’ that, so then why did she give it all up at the end? The childhood I never had... everything was because of Pure, yet I don’t even know the reason why she started it.’ Layla thought. She had struggled with herself with what to do, but soon felt

her legs walking. As she cautiously entered the alleyway, afraid the man would just run away. For a brief moment, she wouldn't even mind getting captured by Pure, as long as she could find out the truth.

Contrary to her fear, the man had stayed there. He was leaning up against the wall in plain sight, as if he had expected her to always come. In fact, he had turned around, revealing a full set of beast gear and a sword by his side. He then pulled off his robe to reveal a number on his shoulder. One that displayed the number 11 in black ink. A tattoo that was wide and thick, a proud symbol.

'Double digits, but not too far off from being a single Agent. Just how much manpower has Pure sent here? and why would you tattoo your own agent number on yourself? What happens when he ranks up or ranks down?' Layla wondered, taking a step back.

The man had a mask on, one of a clown which was fully white with a large red nose. It covered his face but where the mouth was located one could see his mouth and tongue. He started to laugh out hysterically, like a mad man, echoing through the alleyway.

"I've heard about her having an incompetent daughter, but how much of an idiot can you actually be to follow me into a place like this? Are you just trying to cause trouble for your new group? Or do your mommy issues really affect you that much?"

Number 11 pulled out his sword, which had a red hilt on the bottom, and suddenly flames started to flicker as it was activated.

"You know, I hated your mother for the longest time, she was always so uptight. Thought that her way was the only right way. She got in the way of not just Agent 2, but nearly all the other leaders time and time again. There were so many things that we wanted to do, but she just had to get involved. For some reason, 0 had a soft spot for her, so we had to be careful."

"In the end, we didn't even have to use our plan to get rid of her, but seeing how her daughter is still very much alive, I just had to act. Do you have any idea how many times that b\*tch punished me to 'correct my behaviour'? Claiming I went too far?! Well now she's gone, so I'll at least have fun with her daughter! And you know the best part of it? After I have had my fun with you, I can bring back your corpse and will be hailed a hero for getting rid of a traitor!"

This was new news to Layla, whenever she was at the Pure base everyone seemed to respect her decisions. Even the other single agents listened to what she had to say. She never knew that her mother was always seen as the enemy within Pure.

'How could that be, how did it even end up being that way?' Layla thought

Powered by her strong emotions, Layla had enough. She quickly placed an arrow into her bow and fired it out. Agent 11 lifted up his sword, still laughing as he activated his Qi to block it.

'This will be an easy fight, she was never even ranked above fifty. Despite her being that woman's daughter!'

When the arrow collided, neither one was giving in. The arrow was stuck mid air against his sword. Even activating the flames it seemed like they were unable to reach the arrows for some reason, eventually Agent 11 got pushed back, since the force of the two arrow's were stogner than his.

'Using my ability with my Qi has gotten a lot better. I can increase the force even now.' Layla thought.

"What? When did a lowly double agent like you learn how to use Qi? It was your b\*tch of a mother, wasn't it? Ha, just wait until I tell the others! For being so uptight about rules and order, she actually taught it to you even though she was the one who had insisted that we only teach it to high-ranking agents!" No longer trying to block the arrow, Agent 11 moved to the side allowing it to continue going forward.

However, another one was coming towards his face, and without knowing about it, one was heading towards his back as Layla was able to control the direction of them both.

'He's too overconfident because I was a low level agent, and I can use that to my advantage. I've got him!' , Layla thought. At that moment though, the arrows fell to the ground. As two more men came out slashing at the wooden part of the arrow and stopping the attack.

Then, two more had appeared behind her.

“What a silly fool, you will die the way you were made!” Agent 11 laughed, as he charged forward with his sword. Seeing how now they were too close, Layla had no choice but to transform, sadly the process took some time so she needed to find a way to buy it against their group.

Smashing down one of the agents, Logan had arrived and lifted his metal plated arm to block the sword attack from Agent 11. Two more robotic arms had come out from Logan’s side by his ribs and fired energy blasts hitting the other two away.

“Logan!” Layla shouted, but she didn’t have time to worry, as she turned around to face the two agents behind her and fired out two shadow chains. Locking them both in place. Now she had the time to transform into her second form. Horns grew from her head, her body grew slightly taller, and placing the bow away she now drew the sword by her side.

In her second form Layla had the strength of a vampire, which could even exceed that if fuelled by negative emotions. And right now, the girl was pissed, intending to make sure to at least find out what Agent 11 meant by stating she would be killed the same way she had been born.

The man could only think one thing as he saw the girl transform in front of his eyes, that she was a monster. He also didn’t understand how a regular person managed to block his Qi-filled attack with just a metallic arm. Soon enough he got an answer, as the casing from the arm fell off, damaged from the sword strike.

“I knew your faction housed monsters, but I didn’t know you even housed Dalki!” Agent 11 shouted in horror, as he looked at two monsters in front of him.

My Vampire System Chapter 1153: Layla’s anger

Entering the field, Quinn grasped the sword that was in his hands and made a few practice swings in the air. He looked around, taking everything in as it all felt so real. It was different from playing the VR game Powerfighters. He wasn’t sure if it was due to the mix of VR and AR that had created something extremely special or if it was something else.

‘Logan, it looks like you’ve improved something yet again.’ He looked to the side of the arena expecting to see him there, but that’s when Quinn noticed that not only was he missing, but so was Layla.

'Did they both have to go to the toilet at the same time? Judging by Fex's exaggerated expression I don't think they went to the toilet.' Quinn thought. Sound from the outside was emulated into the machine, so Quinn was able to hear the cheers from everyone around, but specific things that they were saying weren't heard at all.

'I might have to try and finish this quickly.' Quinn thought as he looked at Longblade on the other side. The field had finished generating, this time it was an open field, with long grass and nothing else.

"It looks like I'm in luck. This is one of my favourite maps to fight on. There is nowhere to hide, and only our skills will decide the outcome of the fight." Longblade thought as he pulled out his blade which was long like a katana. Going by his weapon's choice he had the feeling that the Colonel and Leo would surely hit it off.

The fight began, and Longblade dashed forward running with his sword down by his side. When he was within range, he struck upwards from below. Pulling back, Quinn was able to avoid the blow that almost grazed his chin.

'This person is good. No wonder he was one of the Head Generals in the past.' Quinn thought.

To everyone else, they were expecting the fight to have been easy. After the first connection, Longblade would start to deliver the remaining finishing blows, but that wasn't the case at all. The simulation allowed them to use their beast gear and the stats that were powered within it. However, 'Bucky' wasn't wearing any beast gear.

If he did, he would have been able to use the speed of his set to his advantage and could finish the fight in seconds. Quinn had intended to beat him fair and square, hopefully earning the Cursed faction a good reputation during their stay.

Of course, if he had known that Layla and Logan would have gone off, he wouldn't have cared for that. He had earned his equipment, so Longblade wouldn't have been able to criticise him for it, still his natural body as a Vampire Lord was fast enough even without it.

After the first strike from Longblade, a few more came after and Quinn blocked each one with his sword. Unlike his opponent he was using a standard long sword. Someone would usually have to wield such a



large blade with two hands but Quinn was able to with one. He blocked the swords moving them in place whenever he could see Longblade striking and was being pushed back a bit.

“You’re just relying on your body’s natural reactions, I can tell!” Longblade pointed out. “But you are inexperienced when it comes to holding the sword.”

It was true, Quinn didn’t know how to properly parry, or do any of the sort, but his strength and speed allowed him to deflect all those attacks aimed at his vitals. Exchanging blows with him, Quinn could tell that Longblade’s swordsmanship was impressive.

“I have fought against someone who is better with the sword than you. I thought I could learn something, but I guess not.” Quinn sighed, as he struck, not holding back as fast as he could towards the side of Longblade.

The attack was too fast for him to react, and he had been hit. With the system emulating the power in the strike Longblade felt the pain and was sent across the field. The only thing he could do to slow down the attack was to dig his blade into the ground.

“How fast was that attack?” Longblade wondered, When looking at the game screen, Quinn saw that the Colonel’s points had only dropped by five. Meaning it wasn’t counted as a lethal blow.

‘I see, the system is going to make him recover from this, so it looks like I’m just going to have to hit him a few more times.’ Quinn concluded.

At the same time, Longblade stood up, but he hadn’t lost hope, for he had an ace up his sleeve. The use of abilities wasn’t exactly banned from the match, so there was one thing he could do, as his eyes started to glow.

---

In the alleyway, a sword was shining brightly as it was covered in flames, but it was doing nothing against his opponent. Logan could feel only a little heat from the sword he was blocking with his Dalki arm.

“The Cursed faction seem to be just full of monsters!” Agent 11 shouted, as he placed more Qi into his blade making the flames brighten more and was ready to strike again, but then Layla barged forward and struck with her sword. The two powers of Qi clashed, creating vibrations through the air.

“Logan, let me deal with this one!” Layla requested showing off her large teeth. In a close range fight and a battle of strength, her second form was better suited than her third form, and she was just hoping it would be enough.

“Well, little beast, at first I wanted to kill you, but I guess you still might have some use being kept alive! Too bad for you, we don’t need you in one piece!” Agent 11 let out another crazy laugh, as he swung his sword again, managing to cut Layla’s arm. It wasn’t deep as the girl managed to pull back avoiding most of the blow but her body wasn’t healing like it usually would.

‘Is this the second stage of Qi?’ Layla wondered, as the clown started to bombard her with his attacks. She knew how to use the second stage of Qi to a certain extent, but she was unable to use it on anything but her arrows. Unfortunately, her arrows were not enough to deal with him, but she wasn’t faring much better with her sword. She wasn’t a master swordsman, either, but he seemed to be quite skilled.

Soon the attacks were building up on her body as she was cut more and more in different places.

‘I hardly used the second form, I should have practised with the sword more instead of using my arrows.’ Layla chastised herself, but now was the time for regrets. She knew that would have to wait until after the fight.

The only reason why she was doing okay so far, was because she could still power her sword with the first stage of Qi. Making her strikes powerful. Nonetheless, the difference between the first stage and second stage quickly became apparent.

Coating his sword with the second stage of Qi, he was able to chip at Layla’s sword which was at the King tier level. Both swords were made from the same level of quality crystals, yet Layla’s weapon continued to suffer until, it broke.

“You’re finished!” He shouted.

With nothing else to use, she decided to block the attack with her bare arm. Afraid that something would happen, Qi started to run through her veins and she used what power was in her body to allow it to do so.

Striking forward Agent 11 was going for a clean cut, but instead his sword was left there stuck in place.

'What is going on, is the Qi in her body really this strong? Strong enough to even block my second stage and when using a weapon.'

Layla didn't know how her bones and flesh were able to withstand the sword, but the sword was slipping deeper and deeper into her by the second and something had to be done.

Jumping back, Layla pulled out an arrow from behind, she held onto two of them like a spear. In the desperate situation she threw both of them towards Agent 11 who was confident enough to dive right in. He went to strike and block the blows but the power of the Qi was more than he had expected, getting pushed back before he could further injure it.

'How is that possible? I hate to admit it, but somehow her Qi is actually stronger than mine. I've only had the advantage because I know the second stage, but she can actually use it in her arrows to some extent.'

Changing the shape of his Qi, he was able to redirect the arrows, but when he was ready to, he felt something slice the back of his ankles causing him to fall to the floor. The next second, pain shot from the front of both his feet.

Looking down, he saw that the blade that had broken, she was controlling it with her telekinesis and used it to attack the back of his foot while he was distracted, and now lifting the two half into the air, she slammed them down on his foot, and they had pierced the front as well.

'But how? I'm wearing beast gear, and have the power of Qi running through my body.'

The next second, Agent 11 was constricted by the body of a serpent, as it wrapped around him. His body was getting crushed by muscles stronger than he had felt before, and on the tail end of it, he could see a beautiful woman.

'This Qi! It's as powerful as the first digits! And that attack just now... did she infuse the blade with the second stage as well... is that... how she hurt...' Before he could finish his thought, Agent 11 had passed out and Layla left him on the ground. Having exhausted a lot of her strength, the girl turned back into her usual self, but she could barely stand as she knelt up against the wall.

'I did it! I was able to beat a single high ranking double digit agent that was able to use Qi, by using my own Qi. I have improved... Shit, Logan.' Layla suddenly remembered that she wasn't alone. Turning around, she saw that Logan was having hardly any trouble dealing with the other agents, and now that their leader had been subdued on the floor, they decided that fleeing the area was the better choice than continuing to fight against Logan.

'We already have the highest ranking one, and I'm sure there are other Pure members out there. It's better to fall back.' Logan decided. The spiders started to form and collect over his Dalki arm once more. They took the broken parts from the floor and started to fix it in place covering it once more.

Then the spiders soon moved to the Agent who was left passed out on the floor, and they started to cover his legs in place, and surround his body as well.

"He's an agent of the Pure I'm assuming. I can only imagine that group causing you to act so reckless..." Logan was about to give Layla a lecture about her stupid act, but he decided to postpone it. She had done well in the fight, and she was obviously exhausted.

"Let's take him back to Quinn. With his powers he's the best person to interrogate him." Logan said. "If we hurry, we might be able to make it in time to see him humiliate Longblade!"

My Vampire System Chapter 1154: Bucky a legend?

Before entering the VR capsule both parties had been told the official rules by the organisers and both had agreed to them. They were allowed to wear whatever beast equipment they wished. The only beast weapon they were to use had to be a blade of some type.

Both of the blades that would be used would be of the same tier level. Since it was VR, Quinn was able to select a suitable weapon for himself but just chose to go for a standard longsword.

However, the rules had never mentioned anything about abilities and this was because Longblade had one that would give him a huge advantage in this type of match. Since his skills with a sword were usually enough to win over his enemy he didn't really abuse it, but this fight was one he just had to win.

'Did that Logan Green do something to increase his avatar's speed output? Tamper with his strength? At least it doesn't seem like I am suffering from anything like Avion. I didn't want to do this, but I need to even the playing field somehow.' Longblade reasoned as he activated his ability.

His eyes started to glow slightly and pupils' outline became blue. A sign his ability was activated and now he could see it. It was strange when Longblade first used the ability playing the game he thought it wouldn't work, but it had something to do with seeing the opponent in front of him that allowed it to.

'Now let's see, what exactly you plan to do.'

---

Around this time, Logan and Layla returned, only there was a suspicious large box shaped like a coffin on the boy's back. Making it stand out even more was the fact it was easily twice Logan's height. It looked quite heavy, but ultimately the ones doing the heavy lifting were the additional robotic arms. When they finally met up with Fex and the others, Logan put the box down upright by the group's side.

"Finally, you guys returned. What exactly happened?" Fex asked as he turned around to see the strange appearance. "What the hell is in the box?"

"A person." Logan stated without blinking an eye. "We don't want this one to escape so we had to restrain him. Don't worry, he's still alive and has enough air to last for a while. I just thought this would be the best appearance to cover it up. It should deter others from opening it, as they might think there a V is inside."

Fex wanted to say something, but judging by how extremely extremely tired Layla looked, the cuts on her arm that were healing slowly, while part of her body was badly bruised he understood that it couldn't have been an easy fight.

On the other hand, Logan looked completely fine, no wounds whatsoever on him. At least from what they could see on the outside. It made the vampire question if he had actually provided backup or had just let the girl do all the work.

Logan had been able to stop most attacks with his giant Dalki arm, but there was something he had realised during the fight. Although the Pure members that had fled didn't seem too powerful, they were able to use Qi. They hadn't been too proficient with it, either that or they had a low reserve of Qi, but it had been enough for Logan to still receive a cut on his arm.

When he was cut and blood was drawn he noticed the colour was green and something strange happened. An energy had entered his body, and he had felt himself becoming angrier. Because of this, he had ended up fighting more cautiously after and it was also the real reason he didn't want to chase after those that had runaway.

'I guess I might need to run a few tests on myself. Otherwise I could become a liability to the whole group. In Borden's case he stated he felt an energy rising in him whenever he was injured and his anger was always directed towards those that hurt him and not the others around him.' Logan thought.

He wasn't too worried right now, but it was always better to be safe than sorry.

---

Back in the arena now that Longblade had been sent across the field, Quinn had time to look at the others and there he could see that Layla and Logan had returned. It was a relief for him, that he didn't have to go on some grand journey to save them once again.

He had done that often enough already. Now that he knew they were safe, he could relax and have some fun just as he had intended in the first place. Quinn gripped the sword and waited for Longblade to make his next move, but for some reason he hadn't moved at all.

Instead his face was twitching as if he was angered by something, something that he didn't quite understand.

'This doesn't make sense. With my ability I can see the outcome of the next five seconds based on my movements. So why? Why is the future telling me that no matter where I attack, that I will be the one getting hurt no matter what I do?' Longblade was getting frustrated.

His own ability was simply telling him that no matter what he was going to do next, this Bucky guy who he had first heard of today would be able to react and counter him. However, there was one ray of hope, as Longblade found a way through.

He charged in like before, unfearful and more confident because his ability told him that this would work. Seeing this, Quinn thought it was the same set of moves as last time, but he could tell something was up.

'I might need to use my full strength and speed for this one. I was hoping to win with a clean score.' Quinn smiled to himself. This was what he wanted, to see a swordsman at work, one that showed everything they had.

When Longblade finally reached Quinn, he swung his sword once again striking from down below. Seeing this Quinn went to block as he always had just moving his sword in the right place.

'I'll strike after this block and keep doing so, ending this match.' Quinn thought.

But then something strange had happened, as the sword was in the right place to block his opponent. It seemingly phased right through the Colonel's sword, disappearing and then reappearing like Quinn's sword was never there. It sped up significantly and a clean strike was made right through Quinn's head cutting through from the chin.

A large pain went through him, but the gaming system allowed him to recover quickly and he jumped a few steps back. Looking at the scoreboard it counted it as a lethal blow meaning Quinn had taken ten points of damage.

"Whoa! That's Colonel Longblade for you! The best swordsman in the world."

“I was getting worried for a second when his opponent was blocking all the attacks.”

Quinn stood there for a few seconds in disbelief. He had been taking it easy so far, but just now he had used everything he had in an attempt to block the sword and at that moment, he had no clue what happened.

Of course, if Quinn was using his beast gear, blood powers and shadow powers it might have been different. Then Colonel Longblade wouldn't have been a match for him but it was still apparent that if the two were fighting sword to sword, Quinn would have lost his life.

Not wanting to waste any time, Longblade decided that he would go for the same move again. After all, it was the only one that his ability told him would work.

‘It's not really the way I wanted to win, but as the Green kid said, a win is a win!’ He thought.

Then for the first time, Quinn entered into a stance. He bent down his knees slightly and placed his sword into his scabbard. He made sure his fingers firmly gripped his sword waiting for the right moment.

‘A stance? But that stance doesn't match the sword.’ Longblade was unsure whether Bucky was doing something crazy or was just an amateur who attempted something he didn't understand wouldn't work.

Erring on the side of caution, Longblade activated his ability once again and he could see it. The next move was beautiful, it was fast and would slice him in half. Regardless, Longblade had already started the first steps for the phantom blade strike, the only thing he could do was try to cancel it mid strike in order to survive.

When Quinn could see his foot was in range, unleashing his hand as fast as he could, he attempted a quick draw slash.

‘I don't know if this will work, because all I'm doing is imitating what Leo did at one point!’ Quinn thought as he pulled out his blade.



Seeing this, it was exactly a repeat of what Longblade's ability had shown him. The Colonel cancelled the attack and tried to move out of the way. It looked successful until he felt a sharp pain hit him in his right thigh.

If this wasn't a game his leg would have been chopped right off.

At that moment five points of HP had been lost from Longblade and the two of them were now at 90 HP points each.

The match was intense, and after seeing that move the crowd thought differently about Quinn. A young man had just pulled off an impressive move. Who would be the winner now? No one knew.

'That move, where have I seen it before?' Longblade thought.

A few seconds later and a notification screen appeared in front of them both.

[The match has been forcefully cancelled]

"Sir, I apologise for interrupting your match, but an urgent report just came in. The Demi-god tier has been spotted!"

My Vampire System Chapter 1155: A copyca

As soon as the news about the sighting of the Demi-god tier beast was revealed, it felt as if the entire base had started to mobilise. Even the lab was busy and soldiers, together with researchers, could be seen pulling out the beasts. The non-military folk all came out to cheer the soldiers before they set out.

By the time Quinn and Longblade had left the capsules, half of the arena had already left. The first thing the Colonel did was to wave over 'Bucky', who appeared by his side nearly instantly.

'Well that confirms it. He actually is that fast. I was sure that Green Boy had pulled some trick on the VR machine, but unless one has trained for years and has perfected their body over time no one should be capable of such a thing. It's actually scary to think how fast he would be if he had put on some decent beast gear.' Longblade thought.

Using his ability he could see that there was nothing he could do, even with his favorite sword against the unarmed boy. Bucky would be able to counter him no matter what he did. A shiver ran down the military leader's spine as something even more frightening was revealed. If Longblade attacked this person right now with the intention to kill him, he would be defeated by him with his bare fists.

"I didn't know the Cursed faction had someone who is so talented in martial arts and the way of the sword. You said your name is Bucky, correct? That movement you pulled at the end, it looked a little awkward but familiar. Who is your teacher?" Longblade asked.

The aggression and arrogant tone that had been present in Longblade's tone upon their arrival had disappeared. Quinn didn't know about the other Earthborn soldiers, but it became apparent that he had at least earned a bit of respect from this man.

As for how to answer the question, right now he wasn't Quinn, but 'Bucky'. As for the last move...

"My teacher's name is Leo Suiyan." Quinn eventually answered truthfully.

The second Longblade heard the person's name, his eyes lit up, and now he understood why the move looked so familiar to him. Leo Suiyan was someone he had admired greatly. Longblade, although a middle aged man, had been inspired to pick up the sword due to seeing the war hero Leo in battle.

In the past he had been someone who relied on guns for battle, but they had proven useless against the Dalki. One day, he had the fortune of being saved by the Blind Swordsman, allowing him to witness Leo's swordsmanship. It was one of the reasons he vehemently defended the statement that the sword was the best weapon one could have and why he had insisted on teaching it to those under him.

"Does that mean Leo is with the Cursed faction?" He asked.

That was when Quinn also realised that not everyone seemed to associate Leo with being part of the Cursed faction. He had never been seen in public with them and he had naturally refused all sorts of interviews. Of course, that also meant that the world was still unaware that their war hero was now one of the V many feared.

“He is someone with close ties to the Cursed faction but he freely does as he wishes.” Quinn answered because that’s how he honestly felt about Leo. Regardless if he was his Vampire Knight or not, to Quinn he was his first teacher and someone he still had a lot to learn from.

“I see, in that case I’m even more sorry for the disrespect I have caused his student so far. You are a strong person, Bucky, and I wish you could introduce me to your teacher someday. I would like to personally thank him for what he did in the past.” Looking over, Longblade saw his men already waiting for him. If they had found the trail of the beast, it was safe to assume that Pure did as well.

“The Cursed faction are welcome to come along with me personally as we look for the Demi-god tier beast. Please meet us outside the main Shelter’s headquarters. I will be waiting for you there and will be speaking to Nathan.” Longblade said, before he went off to coordinate the plan they had put in place.

It looked like his fun little game had worked out for the best for all of them. Perhaps Longblade had never intended to put much woe into the Cursed faction, but now it seemed like his opinion of them had changed.

Since the field was not empty of soldiers, Quinn quickly went over to where his friends were and he could tell immediately that Layla was suffering with sweat running down her face and that she was exhausted.

“What happened?” Quinn asked as it was fairly obvious the two hadn’t just gone off to the toilet at the same time. Logan filled him in, about how one of Pure’s members had been present in the crowd and they had eventually tracked him down and that they had captured him, in the hopes he might reveal some intel.

Going by her injuries, Quinn decided to have a quick look at Layla and could tell straight away what the problem was. The amount of Qi in her body was still too much for her body to handle. Quinn had the body of a Vampire Lord and even then, using Qi would put a lot of strain on himself.

For Layla, it was more beneficial for her to use the second stage of qi, or perhaps the third stage, since the Qi would leave the body, rather than reinforce it. If Layla continued to use the first stage to power herself, it would only harm her body, doing more damage than good in the long run, especially with the large quantity she had inherited from her mother.

“Layla, you need to use less Qi on your body. When you shoot it from your arrows it’s okay since it’s not affecting your body so much, but if you use it too much you might damage your body. Imagine if Logan wasn’t there at the time.”

“The rebound on your body was too much and any other pure members would have been able to hurt you.” It sounded and felt like to Quinn he was telling off a child. The thing was Quinn didn’t really understand why Layla had gone after him in the first place, because she hadn’t explained what exactly Agent 11 had said about her mother.

Still, she knew she had done wrong, so she listened to him without complaining.

“Fex, I think it would be best if you stay here for now and look after our captive. Maybe it’s best for you to take him somewhere quiet and ask him the question we need. How many pure members they have, what their goal is and so on. Being a high ranking agent he should know a lot.” Quinn ordered.

Fex honestly wanted to pretest, he wanted to go with them but understood. Since Pure was most likely also going after the Demi-god tier beast carrying another person around would be a huge distraction. If anything while no one was keeping a good eye on them, it was the perfect time to do some investigation of their own.

“Logan, it sounds like the army seems to be making movements. My guess is they’re going to try and use some of the beasts that they have captured as bait for the Demi-god tier beast. The stronger ones should have left the Shelter, or will be protecting the outside walls. If you can, I think this would be the perfect time to head inside, and maybe you can find more information. There are some interesting things there.”

“Lastly, me, Sil, Shiro and Layla will head off with Longblade and his group. Hopefully when we come back, we’ll have good news for you all.” Quinn said with a smile. With everyone knowing what they needed to do, it was time for them to move out.

'Vorden, Raten, it won't be long until I can see you again.' Sil thought.

My Vampire System Chapter 1156: A special gif

Outside of the main base, Quinn was waiting with Sil, Shiro, and Layla. Using a bit of his own Qi abilities, Quinn was able to settle the wild Qi that was affecting her body, allowing Layla's natural Qi to fuse with her injured cells allowing her to start healing.

With the foreign Qi expelled, she was soon enough good as new. At least physically speaking, mentally was a different story. Honestly, Quinn didn't really want to take Layla in her current state. He was deeply concerned, since it was clear there was something that she hadn't told them, and he knew well that she had a history with Pure who were also out on the hunt for the Demi-god tier beast.

The reason why he allowed her to come along, was because he was worried that she would just go off on her own once more, if she was left behind. There was no guarantee there would be Logan or someone else rescuing her next. It was far better off being next to him than away.

While waiting, Quinn observed everything that was happening. Mechs were being escorted out of the large tube tunnels and then being taken to a factory. They were coming out partially destroyed. It looked brutal as more and more were being dragged out.

Quinn noticed another strange little thing. The captured beasts were actually being sent down a different tube, meaning they were heading to a different pit in the landscape underground, not where the damaged Mechs were coming from.

'Are they trying to trick the humanoid beast somehow? If the same thing happens to the Demi-god tier beast as the basic one, then it means after it harvests the crystal it should enter a weakened state. Do they intend to attack it while in the middle of its partial evolution?'

'Are they trying to use this information to their advantage? If they send it down the same tube then maybe it will be too obvious. While sending it to one next to it, perhaps after the beast is done destroying the mechs, it will move to hunt for beasts again.'

Of course Quinn was just guessing, but other than that he didn't really understand what they were trying to do. Perhaps Logan would have been able to shed some light once he had obtained more information.

'Still if we can, it would be nice to capture this beast in one go, and hopefully we can use its body straight away. There will be the matter to discuss with the Earthborn group, but if by then a new Supreme commander has been selected, we can maybe use Sach to order them to stand down.'

Finally it looked like Longblade was done with his meeting, as he came out with a strong team of five men, each one armed to the max in high tier beast gear. Nathan, was an additional sixth person who had come with them, who had listened in on the meeting as their representative.

"I'll explain what has been discussed on the way to the Demi-god tier beast. These five including Nathan are really the only ones capable and strong enough to go against such a beast. The soldiers are evacuating the underground area at the moment, so we might have to use a special travelling tube to go in and out of areas." Longblade explained.

He then looked at who was coming from the Cursed faction, and noticed that the Green boy and one of the V had been left behind.

'I assume it's because Green isn't really much of a fighter. 'Bucky' and the V girl are here. Could it be that not all of them are as strong as him? Or did they just leave the other one behind as a guard?' Longblade wondered, but after having experienced the strength of Leo's student he was glad that he came along.

"Here take this." The Colonel said as he held out what looked like a type of katana blade of some kind. "I know in the VR game you used a sword, but you should follow in your teacher's footsteps. That sword there is a Legendary tier sword. It's the old weapon I used to have, but I found one with an active skill that's more suited to my needs."

"Think of it as your reward for winning that fight earlier." Longblade said.

For a second Quinn didn't even know what to do, should he just accept the weapon or was this some kind of trap. Quinn had grown too used to people from the Earthborn group trying to get revenge, attack them or even more, but Longblade wasn't doing any of that.

Using the Inspect skill, Quinn was worried that maybe there was some type of curse put on the weapon, but he was just even more amazed at what he could see. He had also forgotten for a moment, that the one receiving the gift wasn't him, but 'Bucky'.

Although the weapon had no active skill it had one very special trait. The weapon was indestructible. It was unable to break.

'Can this be real, can a weapon really have this as a skill? Just what type of beast had to be killed to create something like this?'

The stats that came with it, weren't even close to his gauntlets. At the same time he was no master swordsman, but maybe one day it would come in handy to train in the sword, and this would certainly be useful in these types of situations.

"I thank you, for your generous gift." Quinn bowed down and took the katana-like sword that was shining a bright silver in colour, and placed it on his side. He wanted to put it in his dimensional space but was afraid it would give away who he was.

'It seems like hiding who I really am was the right move, and it proves that not everyone in the Cursed faction is a group of bad people.'

Before leaving, Sil had touched Colonel Longblade, taking a part of his power. He looked at the kid, and by now most people were aware of who he was based on the description, so the Colonel didn't say anything and allowed for it to happen.

Finally the group was off.

—

Meanwhile, Logan was attempting to complete his own mission that had been assigned to him. Standing outside the lab, he could see that they were in a rush to get the beast transported down to one of the special tubes.

Using this brief moment of opportunity, Logan was able to take advantage of the situation. His spiders were able to locate and enter the inside of the facility. Watching their every move, while sending information back to Logan.

'I haven't done this stuff in a while.' Logan thought as he walked rushing into the facility just acting as every other soldier did. It was easy to enter the base and he understood once inside why they were a bit lax on the outside. Every door seemed to be made out of glathrium, and had a passcode machine to its side.

Although there were those like Quinn who could bypass those, not many people could. As for Logan, the machine that could keep him out would have to be created first.

'Are all the doors reinforced because of what's inside?' Logan wondered, remembering what Quinn had told him about his nightly escapade. He walked around looking for the specific door that Quinn had entered from last time.

During his time here, he didn't want to leave any stone unturned, but he thought if his time was limited it would be best to get to the most important thing first. Eventually, he reached the area where the said beast was meant to be. Using his spiders they were able to squeeze through the small gap in the bottom.

He checked for any signs of anyone else inside, scientist or anyone else, but apparently there were only a few beasts. Placing his hand on the access code, it took a few seconds before he was allowed in. Logan left a few of his spiders in the hallway, acting as sentries to warn him if anyone wanted to enter.

Once inside, Logan quickly found the Basic tier beast that was being experimented on, telling him that he was indeed in the right room.

"Let's see just what sort of things you've been doing here." Logan mumbled as he placed his hands on the terminal, and the information flooded into his brain. A couple of minutes later and all the information he found useful was inputted into him.



“It seems like there are more labs like this one with different beasts, and they only store the information of each beast in a certain lab. It doesn’t seem like they have been monitoring this one for long. But there is one thing that interests me, in one of the files.’

When looking through all the information, Logan had obtained a map to all the labs where they were running similar experiments on the beasts. But the one that had caught the most attention was one that was labeled Humanoid – Legendary tier beast.

‘Are they trying to make another Demi-god tier beast? Or do they plan to go even beyond that?’

My Vampire System Chapter 1157: Project: Evolve

Looking at the files, Logan was checking through all of the information. The main problem was that it was pretty lacking. It seemed the military was quite careful about not linking systems. So if there was a breach, a single person wasn’t able to access all the files.

‘This might be due to people who have abilities like me. In this case, not even my back doors work out for this type of stuff.’

With no more information being gathered from the current room he was in, Logan decided that it would be best that he head off to the place where the legendary tier humanoid beast was meant to be located.

Before leaving himself, with his spiders still down the hallway, he allowed them to locate where the room was first. Now having access to the map of the facility, it was easier to navigate and eventually, his spiders had reached the room. Once they entered, Logan was filled with confusion at what he could see.

‘Is that real? Without just the spiders, I won’t be able to access any information from the terminals. I will need to enter the room for myself, but what could have happened there?’

Trying not to waste time, Logan sent out his spiders on a different task. They were to head to each room, where a beast was meant to be held captive. It looked like a lot of the beasts they captured were going to be used for bait. However, the others, those being experimented on, were in a different area.

Which was good news for him since he was currently on the second floor with the experiments, and there weren't many people out and about on this floor?

Each room had the beast present. There was even one room that contained a king tier humanoid beast as well. Which was interesting. Suppose all else failed, as long as the intelligence was still there and Shiro could move human minds into them. Despite what tier it was at, they could use the humanoid beast to place Vorden or Raten inside.

Of course, half of Quinn's idea to use Demi-god tier beast or higher was the fact that they would still have strong power. Being in a beast, they would no longer have the powers they once had before.

'What Quinn never considered was the fact that the beasts can evolve.' Logan thought as he stood outside the door where the legendary tier beast was meant to be. Getting inside, it was as easy as the last door, and now he could see the place with his own eyes.

'So what the spiders sent me was real.' Logan thought, looking at the scene in front of him. The whole lab, compared to the other one's, was destroyed. It looked like they had a strange circular container that was centred in the middle.

The front half of it had been ripped apart and chucked to the side, then there were several containers on the outside as well, with glass on the floor. On top of that, nearly everything else in the room had been ripped apart or destroyed, but one terminal remained, the one that was required for the door to be opened.

'Let's hope there is still some information that I can gather from here.' Pressing his hand on all the terminals, Logan was able to extract some information, but a lot of it was unretrievable. With the odd bits of information he did obtain, he did learn of something. The beast that was contained here was the first project they were working on.

It was the oldest compared to all the other experiments.

'I thought that they started experimenting on the beast to find a way to get rid of the Demi-god tier beast, but the reports don't match up. This beast was captured way before the Demi-god tier even started appearing.'

Searching for more information, Logan knew there had to be something here since this was the first experiment, perhaps the reason why they were doing this in the first place. Then finally, he had found two vital pieces of information.

One was a recording of what happened on the last day of the experiment. There were no more dates after this, and the other was why they were running these experiments in the first place.

‘That’s what the facility was being used for? It was a project to upgrade the beasts to create stronger crystals. They were trying to find the most effective way to make the beast evolve to create stronger weapons.

‘It makes sense since, for one, demon tier beasts are hard to come by and very dangerous to kill. Even if they couldn’t make a beast evolve to the Demon tier level, it is still an improvement for the army to have anything legendary tier and above.’

In all honesty, Logan couldn’t fault them for what they were trying to do. They were just trying to use what they had to their advantage. Although it was cruel for the beasts in a way, what choice did humans have? They were in a desperate time, and if they didn’t do this, their lives would be in danger.

Next was to play the video, and now finding this out and putting the pieces together, Logan had a pretty good idea of what happened that day.

The video started to play, and it was an exact replica of the room Logan was in, only that everything hadn’t been destroyed yet. In the centre of the room was a circle machine where the beast could be seen inside. It was hard to make out precisely what it looked like due to where the cameras were positioned.

On the outside of where the beast was, there were several glass displays with crystals floating about inside. A tube above it all redirected to the beast in the centre. Suddenly, all the crystals on the outside started to light up simultaneously. One of the doctors standing in the middle had a smile on his face.

When the lights from the crystals disappeared, the beast in the pod started to light up brightly. Shining so hard that all of them had to cover themselves.

“Finally, we did It! We managed to evolve a Legendary tier humanoid beast into a Demi-god tier beast!” The man dressed in white said. A few seconds later and there was a rumbling that had come from within the centre container.

Several loud bangs were heard after, and the look of panic appeared on the scientists’ faces as they took a step back. The next second, the door was ripped off and thrown all the way to the side.

When Logan looked at where the door had landed, he could also see that the door was still in the same place. Unfortunately, from that moment onwards, the video footage was corrupted, and Logan was unable to see more.

‘The date on this video. It’s only been a month since this happened. It was so soon. Is that why the room still hasn’t been repaired yet? And if my guess is right. The humanoid Demi-god tier beast that the scientist and Pure are after is the Demi-god tier beast from this facility.’

Exiting from the room, it was quite the revelation that Logan had found out, but it didn’t really change anything. They still needed to get the Demi-god tier beast for themselves. However, Logan wasn’t ready to leave the facility yet.

Not all beasts could evolve, and it looked like they had found a way to determine which beasts could evolve. Perhaps this information could be used to help Borden, Raten and Vorden.

After getting all of the information, Logan realised that there was one thing he needed more to figure everything out. He needed to take a subject back with him. Which was why right now, he had moved from the destroyed room where the Demi-god tier beast was kept and was currently in the room where a King-tier humanoid beast could be seen.

The beast could be seen behind a large glass wall. When Logan entered the room, its eyes locked onto him. Following his every move.

‘Is it acting this way because its never seen me before?’ Logan thought.

The beast had a humanoid figure but was covered in black fur. Its eyes were piercing red without any white area. On top of that, it had several tails coming out from its behind that were large and fluffy. They could be seen extending to the top of its head.

'It will take too much time to look for another Demi-god tier beast. I can use this one to research how to know which beasts can evolve and which can't. At the same time, we can just evolve this one.' Logan thought as he went to the terminal and placed his hand down.

Here he had access to many different options, one of them allowing for a special type of gas to enter the glass room the beast was in. The gas was pink in colour and filled the room until the beast itself couldn't be seen.

When the gas finally disappeared, the beast was seen on the floor lying down.

'Now, just need to take this someplace safe. I think it might be best to get back and hand it to Fex. We can try to wrap the beast up. With his strings and my equipment, we should be able to hold it.'

Activating another button, the glass door started to rise. Walking over to the beast, before he knew it, its red eyes shot open and stared right at Logan.

"Thank you for letting me out!" The beast said.

My Vampire System Chapter 1158: Pure or Demi-god

The journey was set for Quinn and the others. At the moment, they were walking towards one of the temporary stations built around the Shelter. All these stations had soldiers guarding the outside of them. This was because they were where the special tubes were used to transport Mech's and more, taking one to the sink spot locations.

What impressed Quinn the most was just how organised and well controlled the army was. The only person he could praise this for had to be Longblade. It seemed like everyone had great respect for him, even though it couldn't have been long since he ran the place.

Most of these men weren't even originally his. A lot of them actually belonged to general Innu.

"I must say you run a great place here," Quinn said, wondering just how he did so.

"Of course, these people know why we do what we need to do," Longblade replied. "We are the support for the main Earthborn group. Without us, there are no crystals for the war. In a way, we are the fuel that powers the engine. I make sure everyone knows the importance of their tasks. If we fail to produce, then it's even worse for the others."

Hearing this made Quinn realise that the people worked so well because they all believed they were working towards the same goal. Defeating the Dalki was essential to the whole of the human race. Still, it was also crucial to make sure that everyone knew precisely their part and how it would contribute to the overall goal.

"Our group is the same Q...Bucky." Shiro corrected himself before he said the wrong name. "From what I have seen. Many of those in the Cursed had nowhere to go or felt like they had no purpose, but they are given a purpose when they are taken in. On top of that, we have a leader that cares for us, and it feels like he will do anything to protect us."

The reason Shiro spoke up was due to the look that was on Quinn's face. He could see he was in deep thought after hearing this.

"Are you talking about Quinn, the Cursed faction Leader?" Rafer asked. The man who asked the question, full name was Rafer Lyle. He was a large man who wore a heavy set of armour from head to toe. His shoulders were nearly as broad as the length of Quinn's whole body he was so big.

He was one of the sergeants currently working under Longblade, and he was one of the few who did not quite have a bladed weapon. On his back, he had what looked like a lance. However, rather than a single point as its attack. The lance had four-bladed edges that ran down to the tip.

"I have heard a lot of things about him, about how powerful he is. A man of that strength, I would love to see him fighting up front." Rafer said with a big smile.

“But isn’t he a V?” Another soldier asked, who was originally a high ranked A class female traveller called Joy. She was on the opposite end of the spectrum, wearing light armour, and had two thin blades on her back as well. “Did you guys even know about it before the announcement was made? I just don’t know how I would feel.”

While saying this, Joy also looked towards Layla, as she was one of those reviled on the broadcast. Longblade also looked at Bucky as he was sure he was a V as well.

“Some of us knew about it for a long time,” Sil answered surprisingly. “It hasn’t changed anything in the group. It’s really annoying how your people look at us as well.”

Frankly, nearly everyone was getting tired of how the others looked at them. Even now, when they were walking with Longblade they would get stares.

“He’s right,” Rafer replied. “It shouldn’t matter, and I think if we can work on this together, it will prove that the Cursed faction are nothing to worry about.”

Finally, they had reached the station, where a strange vehicle was waiting for them. It was mostly clear on the outside and shaped like an old fashioned car. Longblade was the first to get on, and the five men behind him followed. Then Nathan did along with the rest.

The vehicle itself had seats for them to sit on and looked large enough to fit around a hundred people. So there was plenty of room for them all. Then, the vehicle started to move all on its own down the long tube. Now they were travelling down the large hill, exiting from the Shelter where it was placed on a hill heading straight for one of the sinking spots.

“Okay, I guess it’s time for me to explain what is going on,” Longblade said in a loud voice as he stood in the middle. “The Demi-god tier has been found in one of our mining areas as usual. We have cleared all of the destroyed mechs as well as all of them that were mining there.

“The sinking spots have their own natural tunnels below, as well as the large areas we have excavated, but other than that, there is nowhere for the beast to run. After clearing out a mining area, it seems like the beast goes out to eat in one of the other areas. We have planned a trap, so we have put various beasts in different sinking areas near the mining area where it was located.

“These tubes with these vehicles are the quickest way we can travel to each area. Currently, combat mech teams have been sent to the other areas while we are going to the original area where the beast was spotted. We will attempt to follow its tracks, and if we get a report of the beast being spotted in another area, we are to head to these tubes and travel to its location.”

Quinn understood why they were planning to do this. They were using the information they had already received from the lab. That the beast would be in a weekend state after consuming the crystals. Which was why they weren't in so much of a rush to actually send the current team to where the beast would be.

It's almost as if they wanted the beast to eat the crystals.

“This has been our plan for a while now, and we have been able to trap it on a couple of occasions. However, at the same time, Pure has gotten in our way just as we are about to battle with the beast, allowing it to escape. Before, we were initially going to be the ones to deal with the beast while allowing the Cursed faction to fight with Pure.

“However, I think you guys are quite dependable. So I will let you choose which one you would like.” When Longblade asked this question, he didn't look at Nathan like he would before. Instead, he turned to Quinn.

When the question was asked, Layla had tugged Quinn on his sleeve as if she wanted to say something.

“Feel free to discuss it with your group first,” Longblade said. He could tell something was up and headed back to the others.

“What's wrong?” Quinn asked.

“I wanted to tell you earlier, but I wanted to talk to you about Pure,” Layla said. When she spoke, it sounded a bit painful.

“When I went off to meet with the Pure agent, it was because he said he could tell me something about my mother. I know you might not quite understand, but I want to know more about her? Why did she create Pure? What was her reason for doing all the things she did?”



What Layla didn't realise was Quinn understood quite a bit. For now, even he wanted to know more about the Talen family, and why exactly the stone tablet had talked to him only. Curiosity was a strange thing and sometimes, one would go to great lengths to satisfy it, especially if it had family ties.

"You, Logan, I know you're both right, but it's still strange to ask you guys to get involved with my personal business. When it has nothing to do with you guys. How could I ask you guys to fight for me, protect me just because I wanted to know more about my mother? That's why I decided to go off on my own. I know you would have done the same to Quinn, but what's the difference between you and me?" She said as she paused for a bit. She knew the difference. The difference was in strength.

However, Quinn risked his life on numerous occasions, and she was willing to risk hers to find out these answers. It would be selfish of her to ask the Cursed faction to do the same.

"I just wanted you to tell me these things for a reason. My mother was one of the Founders of Pure, and to get my answers, those who are high-ranking in pure will know. The guy I fought against was called Agent 11, and he said that Agent 2 is currently here as well."

Quinn knew from battling with Layla's mother Lucy and the single digit agents were strong. According to Layla, her mother wasn't even in her position due to her strength, but it was because she was one of the founders.

One of the differences between the leaders and those that weren't was that they knew all three Qi stages, while Quinn still only knew two.

"So you're saying you want us to face Pure instead of going for the demi-god tier beast, or are you worried that maybe the Colonel can't handle Pure if we leave it to them? Perhaps you want us to capture agent 2?"

Layla remained silent. She really didn't know what to do. This might be the only chance they could capture a humanoid Demi-god tier beast. At the same time, when would they meet single ranking agents of pure?

They soon were coming up to the sinkhole, and Longblade stood up expecting an answer.

## My Vampire System Chapter 1159: Solving both

It was time for Quinn to make the decision. However, it wasn't quite as black and white as some people thought it might be. As he looked over at Sil he could see a smile on his face swinging his legs like a little kid. Ever since being on this mission, his mood had brightened up. Now that he was so close to achieving the goal, if they failed, or it got delayed any longer, then perhaps Sil would snap.

Although Quinn could control him and face him somewhat, it wasn't something he wanted to do.

Sil had waited long enough already. On top of that, the military would most likely just kill the beast instead of capturing it unless Quinn made a request.

'Now that our relationship has improved with Longblade, maybe if we ask, he will agree. Still, his number one property has to be to get rid of it?' Quinn thought.

Looking at Layla and everyone there, the worry deep frown on her face, he knew what the right decision was to be.

"You don't have to worry, Layla. Remember both groups will be together, just both have different tasks." Quinn replied. "It's not like we're splitting up or anything. Well, try to do both." At that moment, Quinn wanted to comfort her. His hand reached out for hers, but before even touching, a strange feeling had come over him.

'Again? But before, we could touch just fine, but now it feels like that stupid connection thing is coming up again! Why does it only activate sometimes?' Quinn thought.

Standing up, Quinn walked over to where Longblade was and was ready with his answer.

"We will take care of the Pure group. However, I would like to make some requests." Quinn said. "I know your group has already done a lot for us, even allowing us to come along, but the Cursed faction needs the Demi-god tier beast. We need it alive."

Hearing this, Joy thought this Bucky person was crazy. Why would they agree to capture the beast alive? Not just that, there was a double meaning to this request. If they were asking this, it also meant they wanted to keep the Demi-god tier beast as well. Since the military had no use for it alive apart from its crystal.

“I would like to put Sil on your team. I’m sure you know about his powers.” Quinn said. “He will be strong enough to allow your group to subdue the demi-god tier beast alive. In return, whatever you need from the Cursed faction, we will comply.”

Although Sil was unstable at times, Quinn could rely on one thing, and that was his power. Knowing how important this job was for him, Sil would make sure it would happen by putting it in his hands.

He could see that Layla would go for the Pure members, and Sil would go for the beast no matter what. So in his head, it was who needed more help. Still, if he finished one job quickly, he could help out the other as well.

Longblade paused for a few seconds, not giving an answer. While he looked at his people and the others.

“The Demi-god tier beast has hurt a lot of our people. They will be upset to hear that the creature is in the Cursed group’s hands, and a Demi-god tier weapon would greatly improve our group’s strength. Especially a humanoid one. Whatever you give in return will need to be of equal value or greater.” Longblade said. “Do you have the authority to promise us this?”

Without hesitating at all, Quinn replied.

“Yes, I do.”

The largest grin had appeared on Longblade’s face after hearing the answer.

“Then we agree, but I will not force my people to keep the beast alive. If they are in danger, they are to protect their lives most of all. I will also not be responsible for looking after the Blade boy.”

Longblade had heard from Oscar, who precisely this boy was, and how strong his powers were. It was a story many of them found hard to believe, but since the report came from Oscar, they had no choice but to.

“Of course,” Quinn said.

At that moment, Longblade leaned over.

“I hope this can improve our relationship, Quinn,” Longbalde whispered and walked off to his people to make sure everyone was ready.

Hearing this, Quinn had a look on his face of disbelief. He didn’t understand how Longbalde had found out. His disguise was perfect.

‘Of course, he would find out who you were.’ Vincent said. ‘Who else would have the authority to give something of equal value as a Demi-god tier crystal. You didn’t even hesitate or ask for an okay from the others.’

It was a slip up, but Longblade must have had his suspicions after the match.

They entered the underground tunnels, and the vehicle they were in was starting to slow down. Eventually, it had come to a complete stop, and two giant mechs were seen standing by the vehicle as well as two more guards. Their duty was to protect that underground station.

Getting off from the vehicle, it was quite impressive what they could see. It wasn’t a tunnel like they had imagined. The walls were far wider than they could reach. It could fit at least four or more of the vehicles they had come in; it was so wide.

The walls were also filled with white lights that would go across the edges, making it easy for all of them to see. The only thing that felt like they were underground was the flooring. However, even that was flattened out for them to walk on.

“As we mine, we also continue to resurface the place and make improvements,” Longblade explained. “The planet is full of sinkholes that one can’t really travel on the surface. So we thought of moving the Shelter underground and travelling via the vehicles when needed. The above Shelter will remain as a storage place for the crystals.” Long Blade explained. After that, he pulled out his katana blade and walked forward.

“It’s time to head to the mining area where the beast was last seen.” Longblade ordered. The groups split into two and started to walk side by side. Quinn out front with his group, and Rafer standing out front for Longblade’s group. He was a large, powerful man that looked like a tank. A person who wouldn’t fall easy, so it made sense to put him out there.

----

Meanwhile, in the tunnels themselves, in an area that wasn’t as well done up as where Quinn and his group had arrived from. There was agent number 2.

“Alright, this time I’ll be moving out by myself. I’m sick and tired of staying in this underground place. We have news that they have called for help from the Cursed faction, but no one of significance has arrived. We need to deal with this before even more help is on the way.”

----

After walking for a while, they came across the mining area where blue crystals completely lit up the wall. It was a big area, and even looking up, they couldn’t tell where the ceiling was. Yet, they had built machinery to help them extract the crystal from up high. It was as if they wouldn’t let a single crystal go to waste.

Looking around, it didn’t seem like the beast was here. They could only see destroyed machinery and a few parts that had fallen off from the mechs earlier.

Just then, Longblade received a message.

“Everyone, the beast has been spotted in area C. That is one of the areas where the beasts are located, hurry let’s head back to the vehicle. We can catch up with it then. Otherwise, it might get away before we get to it.”

“Longblade, is there another way to get to the beast other than using those vehicles?” Quinn asked as they were running back. Once they reached the station, they could use another one to take them to the area they were heading in.

Longblade then pointed to a hole in the tunnel back the way they were. It wasn’t carved out properly since it was a natural tunnel and not one created by them.

“If it’s in area C, it means it must have used that tunnel to reach it, but we wouldn’t get there in time. There is another reason why we had to come to this area first. I don’t know how, but I think it can sense when we arrive at the last area. “

“Only then does the beast move to another area, so it must have just arrived at Area C. We have only recently been using vehicles. Even then, we are only managing to catch it on the tail end just as it’s in the middle of fighting the last beast.”

Hearing all of this, Quinn knew what he needed to do, a way for him to solve both of the problems from earlier. All he had to do was capture the Demi-god tier beast before Pure arrived.

“You guys go ahead. I’ll meet you there!” Quinn shouted, turning back around and running the opposite way.

Longblade wanted to ask what he was doing, but there was no time to waste. If they didn’t get to the vehicle now, they might miss the beast. Or worse, Pure would arrive before them.

So far, they had been arriving at the exact same time. It was a race.

When everyone finally left, Quinn activated the shadow putting on the beast gear set that shined a great silver with blue.

[Armour set skill activate]

[Nitro accelerate]

My Vampire System Chapter 1160: Pure scum

It seemed as if everyone was off challenging new threats and going on exciting adventures... yet there was one member of the Cursed group that didn't feel this way at all, and that was Fex. The vampire was currently on the roof of the Shelter's tallest building, the main military base .

It would be hard for anyone to find him up there, as only the soldiers and Mechs guarding the Shelter wall would even be able to look that high. However, the distance was so great that they would have to have the sight of a vampire to see anything but a black dot, not that they had any reason to look for him in the first place.

'What's with my luck today? I thought it was a good day when I got the chance to pilot that Mech, but this is the second time today I got assigned babysitting duty, while the others are off to have some fun.' Fex clenched his fist in anger, as he looked at the one he blamed for his current situation.

With him on the roof of the building was Agent 11. He was the whole reason why Fex had made his way up here. The prisoner was sitting on a chair that the vampire had swiped from one of the rooms on the way up. His legs and arms were heavily bound with the red string.

Fex had made sure to not hold back, as lately they had snapped so many times that he had started to wonder about their durability. As long as Fex had time, he could reinforce the strength as much as he liked, preventing most from escaping. In a fight he only had minimal time, besides his string ability had always been meant for puppeteering, instead of their current utility.

'Should I perhaps create something like my father had? If I ask Alex he might be able to create a few things for me from beast gear. Maybe like an empty knight of armour or something like that. Although if we need a 'living' subject, there is one right in front of me. I doubt Layla will mind once I get the information out of him.' In the middle of his thoughts, Agent 11 was attempting to move but he barely managed to move the chair. The strings around him resembled a large cocoon, preventing him from any types of movement except for wiggling.

“Who are you? Are you working with that damn traitor?” Agent 11 asked.

Looking at the man, Fex sighed. “Come on, do I really have to explain your current situation to you? It should be obvious which one of us will be the one asking the questions.” Looking the Agent dead in the eye, the vampire’s eyes started to glow red. He then pulled out a sheet of paper with the list of questions he needed to ask him.

“How many members of Pure are currently present on this planet?” Fex asked, as he was ready to scribble in an answer.

However, contrary to his belief, the Pure Agent didn’t give him an answer. As Fex looked up, he could see that the other’s eyes didn’t have the typical look of someone under a vampire’s control.

As a member of Pure he had been trained to protect his mind from mental type abilities, which was delaying the Influence skill Fex was using. Still, it felt like it would soon win out and take over him.

‘Those red eyes, so he’s one of those V. Is this the mind control that they warned us about? I can’t use my Qi to break out of these strings, but I can still do this.’

Controlling his Qi, Agent 11 was able to use the second stage to form something akin to a barrier around his brain. Then using the first stage, he was able to power up his brain even more, dispelling whatever was trying to force him to answer the question.

When he no longer felt any power inside him, he looked up at Fex and smiled.

“Nice try. Go on, ask me as many questions as you like? I have all the time in the world, buddy.”

‘What the hell? Nobody told me my Influence skill doesn’t work on those Pure guys! Fex was shocked, shaking his head. ‘Shit, I have to do something! What kind of embarrassment would it be, if I can’t even complete such a small task by the time the others come back?’



The vampire pondered what he should do now that his go-to method had failed. He could resort to torture, but the man in front seemed like the type that wouldn't respond to it. In the first place, torture ran the risk of only receiving the type of answer the torturer wanted to hear, with no way of verifying it. Under the Influence skill the victim couldn't lie, which made it the far better choice.

"Did you already run out of questions? How about I help you? Why don't you ask me some things I would just loooovvvve to share with you?" Agent 11 offered with a self satisfied grin. "You're with that b\*tch's bastard daughter who is just dying to find out more about mommy dearest and since I'm feeling generous let me tell you some things. Now those might just have been rumours about her birth, but if that was all they were, there would have been no reason for Zero to forbid anyone from ever talk-."

The next second, Fex had already wrapped the man's mouth. He was tired of his cocky nature and he had no desire to listen to him badmouth Layla. The vampire walked up to the bound prisoner, lifted up his hand, and before the Pure member could blink he already felt the sting from the other's slap. The whole chair fell to the side from the force behind it, and Agent 11's cheek grazed across the ground.

"You're so annoying. What the hell do I care about her past?" Fex questioned him, not expecting any answer. "She helped my arse back then, so I'm just trying to help her out as well."

'How strong of a slap was that to have knocked a few of my teeth loose? I was using Qi to protect my body from torture, yet he managed to overwhelm my defense that easily? Damn it! We knew about the Cursed faction coming to reinforce them, but who knew they were this strong? I have to somehow find a way to warn Agent 2 that we have completely underestimated them.'

Standing on the edge, Fex looked down on the busy mass of people. Out of curiosity he placed his hand cupping around his ears to have an easier time hearing what they were saying.

"The Sergeant has told us to get the Mechs ready and to move them to area A where the beasts are located."

"But doesn't that mean we will have to fight the beasts off, what are they thinking?"

"It's in case the Demi-god beast decides to change areas and hunt more beasts. The idea is not to kill the beasts but just hold them off with the machines. We just need to wait for the higher-ups to arrive and

then make our way out to not get in the way. Alright, I'll meet you in the hangar and we can get our team ready then." Avion explained.

'What an interesting conversation, so they send Mechs down in the underground tunnels where the others are. Well, there's not much I can do with that guy, so I might as well make myself useful. Logan should be fine on his own, since he's just getting information from the Lab.' Fex reasoned, but there was just one problem he had to deal with. He couldn't leave the guy up here on his own.

Carrying Agent 11 under his arm, Fex had a goal. He quickly traveled to the hangar, where the Mechs were located. He used his hearing to locate a soldier away from others and quickly found one who was about to board on to a Mech. Fex quickly pulled him down, and activated his Influence skill once more.

"I need you to tell me your name, your rank, pretty much everything so nobody gets suspicious about me piloting your Mech." Fex ordered. Fortunately, there was no problem with his Influence skill this time. After getting the answers he needed, he tied up the soldier and hid him behind a bunch of crates where he wouldn't be found anytime soon.

"Soldier Kane, why are you slacking behind!" Avion shouted through the Mech's terminal as the other pilots had already started to leave the hangar.

Quickly jumping in, and throwing Agent 11 in the cockpit cramping him up against the wall, Fex activated the Mech and trotted behind the rest.

'Hehe, this is going to be great.' Fex thought with the biggest smile on his face.

My Vampire System Chapter 1161: Unlikely Pair

Fortunately, Logan hadn't gotten too close to the beast before it had opened its eyes.

'Why did I trust the amount the scientists stated?' Logan blamed himself for this grave miscalculation. When going through the terminal via his ability, he had read the report about how much of the pink gas had to be used to subdue the beast. As such, that was also the amount he had used, yet the beast before him showed no sign of being sleepy or even drowsy.

'Was it smart enough to fool them, waiting for an opportunity such as this all along? It's even able to imitate our speech to a degree where I can understand it, so it's undeniably intelligent. To have learned so much by just observing humans during its captivity... no if this one is already this crafty, doesn't that mean that Quinn and the others might be in danger?'

"I've never seen you before, you seem younger than the others?" The black beast spoke as it sniffed the air. It was around 7 foot tall, a little smaller than a Dalki, but Logan looked even smaller than a middle schooler in comparison.

"That's because I'm not with the others." Logan explained as he took a careful step back. If the humanoid beast was able to talk, then perhaps he could reason with it without the need for a fight.

"Then why did you use the gas? If you just wanted to free me you could have done so without it. You might not be one of them, but all you humans want my crystal." The beast placed its hand around its chest where one's heart would be on a human.

"You use our crystals to power items, like the weapons you hunt us with. To all of you we are simply tools. Even the armour and that arm of yours must have been created from the crystals from one of our kind."

The red in the beast's eyes was getting more fierce as it spoke. Logan didn't know how fast or strong that beast was. There had been some data on it, but since it had fooled the scientists about the guess, it was safer to assume it had been hiding its true strength as well.

"Not all of us are the same." Logan replied, ready to defend himself at any moment. It still hadn't attacked him, so he didn't want to do anything to make it. "There are beasts in nature who attack us on site."

"You're the ones who have invaded our home." The beast replied. "Wouldn't you attack someone who entered your territory? Just because others of my kind don't possess the ability to reason with you and do what is natural you justify killing our kind? Are you saying I get to live because I have some form of intelligence? Then what happens when something more intelligent than yourself comes along, does that mean you all deserve to die?"

Were it not for the dangerous situation he was in, Logan would be admiring the beast's ability to reason right now. It was the first time for him to come across a humanoid beast, he had never realised just how... human they were. Were it not for its outer appearance it would be hard to distinguish it from one.

"I know why you're doing this. You need our crystals because your kind is at war. I have heard this numerous times already. One of you confided in me, claiming how she felt bad about doing this to me. However, it was not because she was sorry for me, no your kind just feels conflicted because I have taken on a form resembling your kind!"

"Just because your kind is fighting against those you call Dalki, you justify what you do to us! You don't even care what you do to our home. The planet is a living thing too and those crystals you mine are what powers the life force all around us. It creates the nests for us to come to live. Getting rid of the crystals means destroying our home!" Throwing out his hand, a swift sound was made through the air.

The distance between the two of them was around ten meters, yet Logan knew the beast wouldn't just swipe through the air for no reason. Pressing his hand on a terminal nearby, his eyes started to glow green.

A beast of this level of intelligence, even if it hasn't reached a higher rank, would be a foe that he couldn't go easy on. Activating his soul weapon. Several of the tubes that were stuck in the terminals started to move about like snakes. The ones on the ground quickly wrapped around each other forming a type of shield in front of Logan, while the ones from above came down trying to attack the beast.

'Good thing I'm in a lab.' However, Logan soon saw that the machinery was useless in stopping the beast attacks, as the temporary shield that had been made was ripped through. The machinery that had tried to attack the beast suffered the same fate. The beast started to run around the room they were in around the edge of the room in circles, Logan continued to use its powers trying to trap it or slow it down. He even formed a blaster on his hand, firing at it.

As each thing came towards it, the beast would use its agility to dodge the cables. Each foot step looked incredibly light and the amount of time it spent touching the surface of the ground was close to none.

'Does it have wind powers? Is that what makes it faster than my speed suit? I'm just going to have to try and create something that can face it, while it's being distracted.'

Using his powers, the terminals around started to deconstruct into spiders and soon they were forming into other things. Unfortunately, the beast ignored all the machinery and continued pursuing Logan. It leapt up on the side of the wall, and pushed using its powerful legs. It spun its body and several of its tails started to spin with it. All the cables that would come close to it were being pushed away by the power of the wind its tails were creating.

'Damn it!' Before Logan could change his plan, the beast appeared directly in front of him and the only thing he could do was lift his robotic arm to block its strike. The beast looked confident as it went to grab hold of the arm latching onto it. It ripped into it with its claws and once the metal was off, the scale-like black arm became visible.

For some reason it paused, instead of continuing its attack. Not one to let go of this opportunity, Logan slammed the beast into the ground with all his strength. Hitting the ground, the boy pinned the beast down and placed his Dalki hand around its neck, gripping and holding it in place, slowly squeezing.

'Looks like the training with Brock was worth it. I'm no longer useless in a direct fight!'

"You...are you a beast as well?" The beast managed to let out, as it lifted its arms and grabbed Logan's wrist, slowly pushing it away. "Why... why are you with the ones that are trying to kill us then?!"

The beast was clearly angry, but Logan's Dalki arm was far more powerful than it had expected. Even using all its strength it was hard for it to push Logan off. So it resorted to the only thing it could do at the time. It opened its mouth revealing its sharp teeth and bit down on Logan's hand. At that moment, green blood started to ooze from the wound and flowed into the beast's mouth.

However, that was a mistake. This only increased the energy inside of Logan's body giving him more force pushing the beast back down.

"Your blood! It's not red! If you're no human there is no reason to fight!" The beast exclaimed in surprise.

'If I knew it would be this easy, I would have let it bite my arm from the start. Now what should I do, before it realises its mistake? It seems to be willing to listen now, so we should get out before anybody comes here. Convincing them to join us might pose a problem, though.'

“That’s what I said.” Logan softened his grip. “I’m not with them. Come with me if you want to get out.”

The next second, the door opened up. Their fight had created a lot of noise and had attracted two scientists dressed in white robes, accompanied by around twenty armed soldiers.

“Isn’t that the kid from the Cursed faction?” One of the soldiers pointed out.

“But look at his arm!” Another screamed out, pointing at it. “That’s a Dalki arm!”

“Maybe it’s just a beast transformation skill.” A third soldier reasoned.

“Who cares who or what the kid is!” The older looking scientist shouted. “He has broken into this facility and wanted to kidnap our test subject. Kill the boy and capture the beast alive!”

Seeing how bad the situation had just turned out, there was only one thing Logan could do. He completely let go of the beast and moved to the side. The two of them gazed at each other and nodded as if they had come to an understanding. If they were going to get out of this one, the two of them would have to work together.

My Vampire System Chapter 1162: Slight hiccup

Deep in the underground tunnels, Longblade and the remainder of the Cursed group, apart from Quinn, were hurrying as they made their way to the unique transportation vehicle. They were planning to take it to arrive at Area C, where the bait for the Demi-god tier beast has been placed.

“Hey, your friend back there, is he going to be okay?” Rafer asked.

Layla looked back to check if Quinn would catch up to them, but there was no sign of him at all. Shiro wasn’t much in use in combat and Sil would naturally want to go after the humanoid beast, so was she supposed to fight off Pure on her own?

Layla had succeeded against Agent 11, but there was a huge difference in fighting abilities between a double digit Agent and one in the single digits. The girl wasn't conceited enough to not have realised that she had barely come out as the victor in their match. Luck alone wouldn't be enough to defeat Agent 2.

"He will be okay." Layla answered. "I'm more worried about myself." She mumbled, but soon she realised that she found herself relying on Quinn once again. After insisting that she could do things on her own, now here she was hoping that he had stayed with them.

'I really can't seem to make up my mind, can I?' Layla shook her head.

Longblade had no idea what Quinn had in mind by staying behind. The quickest way to travel was via the vehicles, but judging by him asking about the tunnels that led to the very place they were going to. He could only guess he was planning to travel on foot, but would he be able to find them since this would be the first time in these tunnels for him.

'There's no humanly way possible he can reach the area before us.' Longblade thought as he smiled. 'But he isn't exactly human, now is he?'

They eventually arrived at the station and quickly entered the vehicle. Everything had already been prepared for them by those guarding the vehicle. The next second, they started moving, travelling so fast through the tunnels that they could hardly see anything.

Finally, the vehicle stopped, allowing them to get off. They ended up in an area that looked almost identical to the one they had just come from. The shapes of the tunnels were slightly different, but it was hardly noticeable, especially for those unaccustomed to this.

However, the soldiers who were protecting the station were nervous as they stood there guarding the place. Afraid that the beast could come for them at any second.

"Has the beast ever attacked the stations?" Shiro asked, looking at how nervous the guards were as they walked through the tunnels quickly but cautiously.

“So far it hasn’t.” Longblade answered. “It seems to be scared. We thought that it might attempt to head to the surface. Perhaps attack the Shelter, but it has remained down here, doing its own thing, binding its time.”

Although Longblade didn’t mention it, he did have an idea of what the beast was trying to do. Perhaps it was waiting and gathering crystals down below where beasts were plentiful in the hopes to evolve. Then when it was a Demon tier with great power, it would come back with a vengeance.

Eventually, they could see the tunnel opening up ahead, and this was where the apparent beasts would be. If the beast was in the middle of fighting the others, then they could take advantage of the situation. Still, at the same time, they would have to be careful that the other beasts didn’t turn and try to attack them.

When Longblade and the others entered, the first thing they did was check the area. They all stopped for a second at the entrance as they didn’t quite know what to do, until Longblade had given them an order.

“Check to see if anything is still alive and moving!”

Hearing these words, they all started to move, fanning out into two groups. Because of the current situation, Sil had decided to come along with Layla, something she very much appreciated. The scene before their eyes appeared to have come from a nightmare.

The room was filled with dead beasts. More than twenty beasts of various tiers that the military had sent down, yet not a single one of them was moving.

“The beast could be hiding inside here still, so everyone be careful!” Joy warned as they poked and prodded the beasts. What they did notice was that all of the beasts had a hole in one particular area. Only the higher-tier beasts had more than one wound.

“All of them...they all have their beast crystal taken out.” Shiro said.



This fact was overheard by Longblade and the others, and they all looked at each other smiling. It meant that their plan had worked, and they had created a perfect opportunity to capture the beast. From their research, the beast should be using it as fuel to evolve, making it enter a weakened state.

At that moment, Longblade pressed his hand against his ear, as he got a report.

“Alright everyone, we need to move out again!” Longblade informed them. “The beast has been spotted in Area A. Avion and his team of Combat Mechs are there. They should be able to hold it there long enough for us to arrive. It will be the perfect time to strike. Due to how far it is from here, we should reach there before Pure does as well. Most likely, they will have been heading in this direction.”

Informing them of this, the group was on the move once again, but that’s what had worried the others. Shiro, Sil and Layla were all looking for any signs of Quinn. They had an idea of what he was trying to attempt. With his speed, he was going to try and outrun the vehicle to get here before anyone else, yet he wasn’t here.

Now with the location changing it would make things more complicated.

Layla put on her mask, intending to inform him, but when she tried to connect, there was no answer on his end.

---

A short while ago, Quinn had activated his armour’s special set skill, the Nitro Accelerator that increased his speed significantly. Using this, he ran through the tunnels, and everything became a blur.

Things weren’t as confusing as he thought they would be since there was only one direction he could head in.

‘I guess this isn’t the time to hide exactly who I am.’ Quinn thought as he used shadow equip while running. His hands were now also covered in the two new gauntlets he had obtained. The main goal was to defeat the Demi-god tier beast as quickly as possible.

'With the white gauntlet, I can hopefully drain its energy just enough so we can capture it.'

Quinn had a plan, but there was a slight hiccup. While travelling, Quinn heard the sound of voices ahead of him, and he was heading right on course for a collision into a group of men. He had no choice but to slow down, but it was hard at the speed he was travelling. The Vampire Lord couldn't instantly stop the muscles in his legs, as he still wasn't used to running this fast.

"What's that sound?" Someone asked. It sounded like a drill going off in the tunnel, but it was just the sound of Quinn's feet hitting the ground at great speed.

Stepping in front of his men, the man with a large number two on his back held out his hand for a few seconds. Then for a split second, they could see what had come around the corner. Seeing the group of people, Quinn leapt up into the air to try and avoid them and felt his body slam against something that felt like an invisible wall.

Agent 2's face squinted as he quickly took down what he had put up, and Quinn was seen skidding across the floor. He soon got up and could see the large number 2 on the person's back.

"Pure!" Quinn shouted out.

My Vampire System Chapter 1164: Undying Mech

A team of six Mechs exited from one of the transporter stations into the underground tunnels of Area A. Due to the large sizes of the Mechs, at most three could fit the entire width of the tunnel at once, so they proceeded in pairs, with one in the front and one at the back.

The one leading this particular group was one of the best Mech pilots the world has ever been blessed with, Sergeant Avion.

As they paced through the tunnel to silence their loud footsteps, a crash could be heard coming from the back. Avion immediately turned around to see one of the Mechs had stumbled and was currently on one knee on the ground.

'Damn it, I missed that rock there.' Fex thought, since he was still trying to get a hang of how to use the giant robot. He had slowly felt like he had been getting adjusted enough so he could fit in with the others, but he hadn't accounted for the change of terrain yet.

"What is wrong with you today, Private Kane?" Avion questioned him. "That's the third time something like this has happened today. I understand you might be nervous because of the Demi-god tier beast, but it's our duty to fulfill our mission! We won't have to fight it, just keep it busy until the Colonel arrives! Now get up and keep up if you don't want to end up as scrap metal for some wild beasts!"

A good pilot had to have a good set of muscles and a strong core and Fex met all those requirements. The vampire quickly got up though from the ground, his body not having any problems with the sudden G-force from falling, stumbling and moving in the Mech.

He didn't like being yelled at, but after every mistake Fex made he made sure not to repeat it. He leapt up to his feet in the Mech, nearly hitting the top of the ceiling, leading Avion to just shake his head at the sight.

'Did he hide some booze in his cockpit and drink it to calm his nerves?'

Soon, the tunnel could be seen expanding into a larger open area. The blue crystals were a clear sign that this section still had yet to be completely mined. They lined the walls and the area in front of them. It would have made for a beautiful sign, were it not for the room full of beasts.

"Remember, the goal isn't to kill them! We are just here to buy time!" Avion shouted as he drew his giant sword that all of the Mechs were equipped with.

Copying him, Fex did the same and paid close attention to Avion's movements. The experienced pilot dodged the beast causing them to tangle up. He somehow also found the time to carefully block attacks and parry beast out of the way. At times he would be completely surrounded and would be able to use the perfect amount of energy to lift him in the air and get out of a tough situation.

Seeing him up close and especially when he compared him to others, the difference was clear as day. Avion made it seem as if the Mech was a living being, each of its movements connected flawlessly flowing one into the other.

'His concentration is unbelievable! How the hell can he move like that without making a single mistake?' Fex was baffled, wondering if Avion might have an ability like Logan that made this feat possible.

The other soldiers that were with them weren't bad, but they just weren't on the same level as their leader. Their actions were somewhat fluent, but it was more as if they were performing a set routine. Whenever it was time to switch things up, there would be a small gap that some of the higher tier beasts started to take advantage of.

This was one of the reasons why Mechs had been paired up. If one made a mistake it was their buddy's job to cover for them. Fex had to do the same with Kane's assigned partner.

The next second he got a chance. Fex saw a slug like creature drop from the ceiling. Running forward Fex slashed the area above his fellow teammate with his giant sword. Dissecting the beast, half of its body fell on its team mates head spilling back blood over it.

"Goddamnit, Kane!" Avion shouted again. "Didn't you hear me? We are NOT meant to kill the beast, our job is t-"

Turning around quickly, Avion could sense something behind him. Not because he had any ability that would allow him to do that, but because the beasts' behaviour had changed. All of sudden they all had stopped attacking and turned looking towards an area of the room.

Even some of the beasts that had been fighting each other had stopped. They were not focusing on the Mechs.

When they all turned around they could see the humanoid figure. The colour of its skin was dark brown, with hints of blue reflecting from the crystals behind it. What stood out was the two green shaped square looking eyes.

As for the body itself, it was strange, parts of it were hardened, while others looked soft. It also wasn't perfectly symmetrical, one of its shoulders was obviously larger than the other. It's forearm on its right hand was significantly larger as well.

“You’ve come again!” The beast spoke with its unnatural voice! “When will you ever learn?!” it sounded like something was constantly in its mouth as it spoke. Clearly struggling to perfectly imitate speech.

At that moment the beasts seemed to be quite coordinated, as they had surrounded the entrance where the group had come from. The fighting between some of them had stopped and now it looked like they were being targeted by all the beasts around them.

“It’s the humanoid Demi-god beast!” Avion exclaimed. “It has to be the one ordering them.”

The beast was a distance away, they were in one half of the room while it was in the other. Avion had no choice but to open the palm of his hand, and started to fire his blaster towards the Demi-god tier beast.

It stood there still, and raised its large arms which started to transform on the spot creating a large shield. The blast hit the shield, not even leaving behind a scratch on the beast.

Soon the shield had formed back into the arm once again. Seeing the blasters didn’t work, Avion started to run forward, but a group of the beasts blocked his path. Leaping up into the air, his Mech had its sword ready to slash the humanoid beast down.

“You’re not so scary!” Avion shouted trying to convince himself. However, the beast transformed its arms once more, this time changing it into two large blades. Avion’s blade was knocked away, with a single hand from the beasts despite it being half the size of the Mech. Then with it’s other arm free it thrust and it slashed towards the Mech’s knees. One of the open areas that was hard to cover.

Luckily Avion had somewhat predicted this, and decided to fire his blasters towards the walls, pushing him back a little bit avoiding the strike.

‘It knows about our weaknesses. Good thing we already knew about this from analysing all the other destroyed Mechs.’ Avion felt somewhat relieved, but there was one more troublesome thought in his head.

Why didn’t the beast aim for the cockpit? Surely it would be the easiest way to get rid of him, so why had it prioritised destroying the robot over killing him?

Behind Avion, the rest of the team were busy fending off the beasts, but it was far harder now that they seemed more coordinated. The remaining five had gotten into a circle formation and were firing off blasts hitting the beasts, no longer caring about their no-kill order.

Avion had done the bulk of the work and his fighting prowess had been equivalent to having four more Mechs with them. Without him, they were finding it incredibly difficult to hold them back, and worst of all they had already been fighting for a while. The users inside the cockpits would soon be running out of stamina.

Trying to catch his breath, one of the soldiers controlling the Mech placed his sword in the ground. He was huffing and panting inside. At that moment, a large dog like beast leaped up, aiming for the cockpit. Although the outside of the Mechs was strong, they tried to avoid the weakening of the cockpit as much as possible, after all if this part was destroyed they would be open for an attack that would take their lives.

Before the beast could reach, another sword came slashing down, cutting off the beast's head. He looked up and saw the #3 on the Mech.

"Thanks, Kane, I owe you one!" The soldier thanked him.

The fighting continued on and on and beasts started to enter from the tunnels around them. Avion didn't seem like he was making any progress and the soldiers were getting exhausted the more they had to fight.

It was nearly the breaking point for them after fighting for nearly over fifteen minutes non stop. Their heart was beating as if they were in a sprint. The only one that didn't seem affected was Kane.

'Did Kane always have this much stamina?'

Then something strange happened, the cockpit of Mech #3 started to open and a person leapt out from inside. When they landed on the ground, the pilots saw that it was actually two people, but not anybody they recognised.

The beast leapt towards these two people, and soon they found themselves being wrapped in string and flung to the ground. The newcomer leapt over another one and punched the beast in the head, killing it in an instant. What was strange about the other person, was they had a black needle sticking out of their back.

Soon, the man they could see started to move at quite the speed and the two of them were dealing with the beasts easier than when they were in the Mechs, and strange lines of red aura could be seen once in a while.

'Piloting a Mech is fun and all, but this seems to be the only true way of fighting!' Fex thought, as he continued to wreak havoc with his unwilling impromptu puppet.

My Vampire System Chapter 1165: Discovering another way

Lying on the floor, Quinn's body felt a little strange. It was the first time he was experiencing something like this. He carefully pushed his body up and used the nearby wall as support. His leg was still bleeding, but the far bigger problem was the wound on his shoulder that was still present.

Quinn gathered up the Qi in his body to try and deal with it. Since he had learned the second stage he was able to move it around freely. Having helped Owen and Layla recently also made for quite the good experience in expelling foreign energy.

The weirdest thing about it though was the feeling he had. Quinn could tell that all the energy in his body was activating, it was constantly trying to heal him, yet the strong powerful Qi inside him was stopping that process. It was as if both types of energies were clashing against each other.

This wasn't the first time he had been injured by a Qi attack, but none had been so powerful to cause such a change in his body. It was a good thing one of his arms was still in good condition. Even though he didn't need them to use his Qi, it helped him visualise the healing.

Hovering his hand over his shoulder, he began the process, and started to reflect on the fight that had just taken place.

'I should have been more prepared. Layla already warned me that Pure was being led by a high-ranking single digit Agent. I already fought with Lucy, so why did I assume she would be the only one who could block out my shadow powers?! This guy was even more powerful than her. She was never able to do something to that degree like the man did, and what was up with that strange red form? The energy that was coming off him was like a soul weapon.

'My blood attacks weren't strong enough and Qi really is a vampire's worst nightmare other than the sun. I might have been royally screwed without my Qi. My blood powers were useless against him and somehow he managed to overpower me in a physical fight.'

After removing the foreign Qi from his body, he consumed blood from his Blood bank and the healing took place as it should have. Thinking about what happened earlier Quinn looked towards his silver gauntlet.

'Maybe I can use this thing more. It might help me out and power my ranged attacks. Getting close to someone like him seems suicidal without my shadow powers.' Quinn thought as he looked at the damage that was done to his leg and soon got to work on that as well.

As he stood there with shaky knees, Quinn decided to use his Inspect skill for a second time. It was quite the strange sight to see but he was wondering if he could spot something.

However, he was shown the same result as did the first time. The room was just full of dead beasts, not a single one was alive.

'It looks like the Demi-god tier beast has already been to this area and is no longer here. Does that mean it's gone to one of the other areas instead?'

Once Quinn's leg was fully healed, he was nearly back at a hundred percent. The Qi energy he had used would take a while to be restored, which was the only downside, but his blood powers and shadow were fully replenished.

'That Pure leader should have used a lot of Qi in our fight, and even with his freaky physique he should feel the effect soon.'



Quinn looked back at where he had come from, the place was sealed up with rocks. The tunnel was completely caved in. Although Quinn could properly try to punch his way through he was afraid that would just cause more rocks to fall and possibly create a cave in for the entire area.

'If I got split up to this side, the Pure members are on the other side. There's a good chance that they'll run into the others. I have to find a way out of here.'

Searching around the empty room Quinn was looking for any way out but he was struggling to find one. If worse came to worse he could use his shadow travel skill, but there was something else that came into his mind, before he would do that.

'Wait a moment. I ran into Pure on the way here and we were in Area B? So that means that surely if there was only one way out from Area C that we should have run into the beast. Then doesn't that mean there has got to be some way out?' Quinn thought.

At that moment, something strange happened. An object fell from above and soon it just crashed and landed right in front of him. It started to slither on the ground and jumped straight towards Quinn.

Grabbing it, Quinn squeezed its head killing it instantly.

'Did that just drop from above?' Quinn looked up and it was hard to see as the number of blue crystals started to lessen. In this case his eyes weren't helping at all, as they had a hard time adjusting to light from the crystals.

If it was completely dark he could actually see better.

'This beast must have come from one of the sinkholes... did the Demi-god tier beast do the same thing? Not all of the surface is a giant sinkhole, so it could be travelling on land, then connecting that way, maybe Pure did the same thing?'

Thinking of this, Quinn thought that it might actually be better to find out how the beast had left this place, and follow it from there. Seeing what state the beasts were in he could see that all of the crystal had been taken from their bodies.

This was a humanoid beast with intelligence, it would know that it got weak after consuming the crystals, so perhaps it had made or found a different area to fall back to as he absorbed.

In the end, Quinn decided the best course of action was to climb up and see for himself. He went up to the wall and started to use his strong fingers to pierce into the wall, then quickly scaled it trying to see if there were any signs of anything. To his surprise he was more right than he thought.

Climbing up past the blue crystals, Quinn was able to see clearer as his eyes adjusted. There he could see that there were several tunnels, and even deeper inside he could see that some of them had beasts inside.

'Maybe that beast didn't climb to the top, after all. If the military only cared about mining crystals, maybe they never found these extra tunnels up here. Which means the beast can move from whatever area it wants when it wants. So then why doesn't the beast just run away? Why doesn't it go to a new area that they hunt and try to take over yet?'

It was then that Quinn remembered the message that was played from the lab. Perhaps the Demi-god tier beast felt like this was more personal.

Using his Inspect skill Quinn just looked at all of the tunnels to see if he could spot something interesting, then something certainly interesting did come up. Pulling himself up he entered and soon started running. He was now running down the tunnel until eventually he had reached a medium sized opening.

Here he could see that a type of platform from a type of dirt had been formed, tuning it into a giant bowl. Regardless, Quinn was interested about what was in the bowl as there were just crystal upon crystals inside.

'Why would all these crystals be here? Wait. Is the Demi-god tier beast just holding these crystals? Maybe it's planning to use them later, or all at once. That also means that the Demi-god tier beast won't be in a weakened state. Not like the military thought they would be.'

There was another tunnel on the other side of the room, and thinking that this was the beast's him he could only guess that the beast went in that direction. Before leaving though, Quinn wondered

something. It was about the Qi energy that was missing from his body and that he still hadn't recovered from.

With the silver gauntlet, he grabbed hold of one of the crystals.

[Skill activated]

The palm of his gauntlet that was holding the crystal started to glow, and so did the crystal. At the same time he could feel the energy moving inside of his body. Growing stronger and replenishing all the energy that he had lost.

'It worked! I can use the skill on crystal and still replenish my Qi. Although the crystal loses all of its energy that way. I can't just leave all these crystals here.' Quinn thought, looking at them all.

'I wonder what happens if I keep absorbing energy from them...'

My Vampire System Chapter 1166: Broken strings

Now that Fex had exited the Mech, things were starting to look up for the Earthborn group. The beasts that had threatened them all by surrounding them had quickly been tied up with his string. The vampire even had time to reinforce his string due to his new puppet.

'This Pure guy's body is stronger than I had expected. He seems to be quite skilled and with my soul weapon giving him extra strength, he turned out to be quite useful.' Fex thought. 'Will Layla mind if I keep him, even if we don't manage to extract any information out of him?'

Despite Fex taking charge in this problem, the main problem remained that those inside the Mechs needed time to recover. Piloting a Mech and controlling it during a fight was similar to being in a boxing match, only that there were no guaranteed breaks in between. This was their first break, and even though they could catch their breath for a second, rejoining the fight they wouldn't be able to fight with the same energy as before until they got a proper rest.

This just further proved how amazing Avion was as a Mech pilot. The Sergeant was fighting with just as much force as he had been doing when he started. The swings of his Mech were just as fast, just as smooth and he still hadn't been hit despite going toe to toe with the Demi-god tier beast.

Under normal circumstances, the entire group would have to be used to subdue such a strong beast. Even when fighting against the Dalki, the feat that Avion performed could almost be called a miracle.

'What inhuman stamina does he have?' Fex wondered. 'And how much stronger could he be if he would turn?'

As things were dying down in his fight against the beasts, the vampire was able to keep a closer eye on Avion, and that's when he noticed the first slip up. So far during the fight, both the humanoid beast and Avion had managed to dodge each other's attacks, the few that had been about to land on the beast would be blocked by the Demi-god tier beast transforming its hands into a type of shield.

Yet for the first time, after battling non stop, the beast didn't attempt to block the attack coming towards it, as it swung down diagonally. The Mech's sword hit its shoulder and the beast's body almost transformed as it was going through it. And then using parts of its hard body, it clenched onto the sword.

Now using its other arm, it had transformed it into a blade that was as large as the Mech's. Bigger than they had seen it used previously and swinging it sideways, it was able to hit one of the mechs weak points. The joint area of its right knee.

Small sparks flew and Avion was surrounded by sound inside the Mech as multiple alarms were going off.

[Warning, right leg is down to 80% efficiency!]

"Deploy thrusters in reverse!" Avion shouted at the machine, as he grabbed onto the sword with two hands. He needed that weapon if they had any hope of subduing, much less killing the humanoid beast. Finally pulling it out, a piece of dirt came with it and the smallest amount of black blood could be seen oozing from the beast's shoulder.

Soon though, the body started to reshape and the blood flow stopped as well. From the looks of it, it had returned to peak condition.

'It can heal? This is going to be a problem.'

Flying back through the air, Avion thought he was safe from the beast, at least for a few seconds while he recovered and thought up his next actions, but the beast's legs started to change again. The thigh muscles started to grow, and it was the same with the bulkiness of its calves. Its legs were now nearly twice as large as before. Kicking off the ground with its legs the humanoid beast shot like a spring and had transformed both of its arms and its shoulder into something resembling a giant arrow head.

'If that thing hits me, then I will be dead for sure! Crap, I let my guard down since it had avoided going for me directly!'

Seeing the beast come at him, the pilot's life almost flashed before his eyes. Instead, a large object had been thrown in front of him. The beast's arrow pierced through the large object sending bits and pieces of scrap metal flying in all sorts of directions.

Although the beast's attack had slowed down for a little it was still coming his way. For a short second Avion had seen hope, the only thing he wasn't going to do was shy away from his death. He would keep his eyes open till the very last second, and in those moments he could see someone standing there in front of him.

The person had a strange black needle sticking out from their back, they were crouched down with their knees slightly bent.

'Who is that and why is he standing there? He needs to move or we're just both going to die!' Avion wanted to cry out as he appreciated the sentiment, but didn't want to be responsible for such a useless sacrifice.

"Screw you guys for breaking my strings all the time, let's see you break this!!" Strings started to rise around Fex and moved towards the palm of his hand. Using Blood control he was able to have finer control of all the strings and was able to create more out at a quick rate creating something. Then when the beast was close enough he threw out his hand, a net of red strings flying at it.

It surrounded the entire beast, but the strings hadn't broken and were still attached to Fex's hand. If one was to look closely as well, these strings didn't look like Fex' normal blood red strings. Rather than the normal shining light coloured red they would be. They looked more to be encased, twice the thickness with a dark red overcoat.

Eventually the beast's pointed arrow head hit Fex's hand, but controlling the strings now with his blood control, the vampire was able to wrap them completely around the beast, stopping its attack.

'It worked.' Fex was gleeful, as the beast stayed in place mid air.

Combining the blood ornament with the red blood strings and blood control was tricky. Especially since Fex still wasn't so great at using Blood control to use these two things at the same time. What allowed him to use such a skill was his special soul weapon that was actually more like a blood weapon.

After making sure the others were okay from the oncoming beasts, Fex tied up Agent 11 one more time, and took the black needle back out from him. In doing so, when inserting the black needle into himself. It gave him the boost and power he needed to fight on.

And there was an added bonus of not feeling bad about who the blood had exactly come from.

Now having seen what happened, Avion could tell that the person who had successfully stopped the attack, was the same one he had fought against in the arena. Not only that, but the weird object that had been hit first was Mech #3.

"Did you see that? That person lifted up the Mech and threw it all the way over there?" One of the soldiers asked the others to make sure his eyes hadn't been playing tricks on him.

The soldiers were impressed but there was still one fact that they all had yet to face. They were simply celebrating due to them having been able to stop one attack from the beast. It still had yet to be hurt while all of them were exhausted, even Avion was now feeling the strain being put on his body.

At that moment, Fex's strings also started to change colour as the Blood hardening started to fall off and break into particles.

'Did all the blood get used up from the needle already? That's a lot faster than it usually takes. Is it because I had to use so much Blood control? Maybe I'm borrowing too much power from the needle rather than using my own.' Still it was all guess work but it meant one thing, that the beast was definitely able to break free.

The beast no longer looked like an arrowhead, and was back in its human form. With its two bladed arms it slashed through Fex's strings.

"Damn it, I knew this was going to happen." Fex muttered, and clenched his fist looking at the beast. "I am a Vampire Noble! I will not be afraid of some beast!"

A gust of wind swept past Fex's face, moving his gelled hair slightly. It was strange feeling this in the tunnel, but he could tell it was the presence of a person. Then the next second, a loud bang was heard, and the beast could be seen flying through the air and crashing into the cave-like wall.

"Quinn?" Fex wondered, as he only knew one person this fast and could back a punch this strong, but his guess was wrong.

"Not quite, but someone who is just as strong." Shiro said from behind.

My Vampire System Chapter 1167: Overpowered

It didn't take long to see who had arrived in a quick flash. There couldn't be many people who were strong enough to hit the powerful beast back like that suddenly. When hearing Shiro's voice, Fex could soon see that the others had arrived as well. Layla, Shiro, Nathan and Longblade with his party of five.

Turning his head back to the front, short blonde hair could be seen.

"It was Sil," Fex mumbled.

"The Demi-god tier is present!" Longblade shouted, drawing his sword. The sword was a piercing dark black colour that looked to swallow the light around it. It didn't look like a typical blade at all. It was still

shaped like a katana, but it almost felt like it was repurposed to fit that role as if it wasn't the blade's original shape. Then there was one finer detail just under the small sword guard, the image of a single large eye with wings. "Pure currently doesn't seem to be present, change of plans. We will ensure our people are safe and allow the Cursed to deal with the Demi-god tier beast. Rafer, you are to support the Cursed faction."

After the command was given, they all got into action as quickly as possible. Jumping to kill the rest of the beasts. Moments before they had arrived, a conversation had taken place as the vehicle was approaching the station for section A.

"If Pure isn't present, then let me handle the Demi-god tier beast." The one who said these words on the vehicle, was none other than Sil. Everyone looked at him as if he was crazy. Was he simply asking to handle it alone? No, he couldn't have meant that, so they assumed Sil was referring to the rest of the Cursed faction.

If Pure wasn't present, they didn't need the whole group to take on the Demi-god tier. At least that's what they predicted.

"That is fine. There will be plenty of beasts still in the area that will need to be taken care of. We shall deal with them and then come support you after." Longblade replied. The reason he agreed was because he simply didn't think that the Cursed faction would be able to deal with the Demi-god tier beast quicker than they could the other beasts.

It just made sense for them to all work together to then take it down. When they arrived at the station, Sil was off before everyone. Far faster than an average person could achieve and almost as if he had a speed ability that was at its peak.

That's what led to the current situation they were now in. Sil stood there looking towards the wall where the beast was chucked into. It soon appeared from the wall with parts of its body falling to the ground, then oddly, the parts that fell started to be replaced, forming back to its original shape.

Its left hadn't formed into the large shield, and its right hand turned into a blade.



“It’s a transformation skill!” Fex shouted, trying to give as much information as needed. “It can form its arms, legs, and any part of it into whatever it wants. I also think what we’re seeing isn’t its real body but its power!”

There was no time to explain further, but having seen Avion make the beast bleed, he could only assume there was a smaller body inside all of that dirt that it was covered in. It wasn’t quite like an earth ability power since it looked as if only a certain amount could be controlled, which was on its body.

Still, it looked like Sil wasn’t even listening. Soon he went in at an incredible speed. He threw out his fist, going for a punch, and the beast raised its shield. The fist collided into the shield, and although it didn’t break, it was pushed back, skidding across the floor.

It soon swung its sword, but Sil was nowhere to be seen and had already punched the beast from behind, pushing it forward again with great power.

“Annoying! Can’t you just leave this planet alone!” The beast shouted, now no longer using the shield but turning the objects into two types of whips. Swinging its arms widely, the whips were going all over the place.

Somehow, Sil was able to avoid every single one, as he moved quickly to different areas avoiding all the strikes. They would miss his face, duck down, going over his head, hit inches away from his foot. Once again, when he got close, he punched the beast in the stomach once more, sending him off and away.

“What is going on? How is that kid so strong? Do we even need to be here?” Rafer said in awe. To their surprise, there weren’t as many beasts as they initially thought. Fex and the soldiers in the mechs had dealt with most of them, and now they were all standing along the edge of the wall away from the fight, including Avion.

They thought that they would be needed to step in and help Sil, but it looked like Sil was completely overpowering the beast.

“Sil, he’s so strong,” Shiro said, as everyone watched. It felt like if they tried to get involved, they would just get hurt. “He told me, he said if he was going to go against a humanoid beast that was strong, then he would need to make his body become superhuman.”

“So he gathered the strongest abilities he could find that would reinforce his body. A speed ability, a strength ability, hardening powers, and then a few high-level ones to boost his MC cells, last of all, he even touched Longblade.” Shiro explained.

Now they understood. With Sil’s powers, he combined the MC cells to have speed equal to Quinn, a strength equal to Qi users, and a prediction that far surpassed Avion. Because if Longblade was able to see five seconds ahead of what was about to happen, then with Sil’s powers, who knew how far into the future he could see.

Still, there seemed to be a slight problem, but Shiro and Sil had already planned for this. After knocking away the Demi-god tier beast again. Sil quickly rushed to Shiro’s side. “Are you ready Shiro?”

Shiro nodded.

“Everyone, we might be away for a little while, but this is the only thing we can do,” Shiro explained. “Protect us for as long as possible.”

Sil had one problem, he had to hold back using his powers in the fight because the goal was to capture the beast alive, not to kill it. However, with its strong regenerative abilities, it almost seemed impossible. Which was why they had a plan.

Soon, Shiro walked along with Sil, and the two of them started to run forward. The beast had changed his small whips into a large one and swung it, covering the whole length of the room. It looked like a colossal battle rope was coming towards them.

Using his hardening skill, focusing it on the side of his body and strength, Sil slammed against it with his shoulder first and made sure he protected Shiro. The two then continued to move towards the beast. With the future site ability, Sil could prepare for anything coming towards them and stop anything hurting Shiro.

Finally, when they had reached the beast, Sil hit its two hands away to the side. Its legs were now enlarged as if it was getting ready to take off, but before it could. Sil slammed the shoulders of the beast, forcing his knees to bend and tumble.

"I am getting them back!" Sil shouted.

Now Shiro got between the two of them and placed his hands on both of their heads. Seconds later, the beast's hands dropped to its side, and so did Sil's.

The fighting had been put to a stop.

"What happened?" Longblade asked, confused about the situation. Why were three people just standing towards the back of the room? Was the fight over? Was it some ability they were using to capture it?

"They're going to do it here?" Layla figured it out.

They had planned to do the mind transfer here and now, but it didn't seem like it would be as straightforward as they thought.

"Just don't disturb them for now, please." Layla pleaded. Not really wanting to explain what they were doing. If Earthborn knew, maybe they wouldn't allow such a thing and would have another fight on their hands.

Longblade looked at them all, but he was just happy that it seemed like they had captured the beast. It had been a while, and the whole task was a lot easier than he had predicted, thanks to them.

They waited a few moments, and Layla expected them to be done by now, but something was clearly happening if all three of them stood still. The most important thing would be for no one to touch the three of them while the transfer was happening.

"Just what is happening in there?" She wondered.

"Everyone, someone's coming!" Fex shouted, alerting the others. He could hear before the others the sound of footsteps. Coming out from the tunnel towards their right, they could see a man who wore a large black overcoat, with around eight of his men.

Agent 11, who was tied up and lying on the ground, could almost shed tears seeing this man. He wiggled and wiggled about because he was so happy.

“Now I see,” Fex said, looking at agent 11. “That guy is your boss, isn’t he?”

My Vampire System Chapter 1168: A dark mind

At the moment, Shiro was performing the most important task he had ever received in his life. He knew that everyone was relying on him before. However, now the tension seems to have risen tenfold.

‘The first part of the plan worked out. Sil protected me while we were heading towards the Demi-god tier beast. Now I just have to do my part.’

Currently, he was in the black space. It was the common area in one’s mind, an area that he had been in many times before. This time the technique that needed to be performed was slightly different compared to the last.

‘I’ve done it once before, but I don’t have the same powers as I did when I was using Sil’s body. I’m going to have to try and do this as quickly as possible.’

Doing it once, the second time was much easier, and as he travelled through the dark space, he could see the two floating spirits.

‘Now which one should I take, and how do I know who is who, just from floating spirits?’ Shiro wondered, but there was a larger issue going on. At the moment, he was also latched onto the beast’s mind, ready to merge the two together, so they were in the same space.

Because he was currently trying to control two mind spaces, his MC cells were being drained twice as fast.

‘I don’t have time to enter both spaces.’

At that moment, one of the floating orbs started to come towards him. As if it wanted to be picked more than the other. From the description of both of their personalities and having met Vorden last time, Shiro only hoped it was Vorden.

Activating a glow around his hand, he was able to grab the floating ball, and now it was time for the two of them to enter the beast's mind. Merging both of the minds, something strange started to happen. The black space started to change as the other mind was brought in.

One half of the room was starting to form a purple colour. Its texture looked like raw meat and flesh, as it was a little bouncy and reactive to the touch.

'Why did the beast's mind have to be so scary.' Shiro shook his head, taking a step forward. Before switching minds with the beasts. He had experienced this before when switching the minds of the beasts. However, unlike humans, who all seemed to have a black space and a deeper white space, the beasts differed depending on what type of tier they were at.

While the human's mind seemed like one could wander in the dark space forever, a beast's mind was limited the lower the tier. Shiro had a theory that it might have something to do with its capacity to learn.

Judging by the size of the mind he could see now, there was plenty of space to put another human mind into it. Walking in the purple area, the floating spirit in his hand started to shine brighter. The further he walked into the other mind, the glow grew stronger until eventually, it felt like it could no longer be continued.

Shiro felt like it was a grenade ready to go off at any second. Placing it on the ground, he stepped away. The light was so bright he looked away, covering his eyes. When the flash had disappeared, and he turned to look around, he could hear someone.

"I'm finally back b\*tches!" The person screamed.

"Vor...Vor..Vor-" He was trying to make a guess, or more hoping this was the person he had met before.

“Please, do you think that wimp would have come forward when seeing the opportunity in front of him? If there were a hundred of us in Sil’s mind, he would be the last person to have come forward.” Raten explained. “For a shrimp, you sure have an amazing power. Now come on, bring me back. This mind kinda looks disgusting.” Raten lifted his feet and a purple slime followed his feet, soon snapping off. “But it will do. Why does it look like this anyway.”

“Umm...” Shiro had been told Raten was a problematic character, but Shiro thought he would at least be thankful to him and would be able to communicate with him easier than others had expected, but it didn’t seem to be the case. What Shiro didn’t know, was Raten was being relatively tame because of this very reason.

In the end, Shiro explained what he was here to do and what exactly they had planned to do with his mind.

“That’s great, so I get to experience being a beast and can hit anyone I like while using my beast form as an excuse.” Raten smiled. “Alright, just go and leave me here then, you can go back, and I’ll take over this mind.”

Shiro didn’t move, and that’s when Raten noticed that there must have been a second part to this that hadn’t been said yet.

“The thing is, when we entered this mind, I felt it. The beast’s mind also was able to enter into its own space. So it’s inside at the moment. If I leave you here, then the beast will still have original control just like Sil did.”

“Then what the heck do we do, you little brat!” Raten said, raising a fist as if he was about to punch him, but soon controlled himself and put it back down by his side.

In all honesty, Shiro really didn’t want to bring a person like this back.

‘How could Still be friends with someone like this? I can’t imagine the two of them ever talking.’

“I don’t hundred percent know, but there are two things I can think of. At the moment, we have nowhere to put the beast into. We can put it into Sil’s mind, but that might cause a disturbance, so my suggestion would be, we either talk to the beast and ask it to use its bo-“

“Are you really that dumb? The beast just fought for its life against us. You think if we ask nicely with sprinkles on top, the beast is just going to let us use its body»? Then it could take over at any point and time and just attack the others even if it said yes. Nope, dumb move over to the next option.”

At that moment, they could hear the sound of the goo moving. The whole room seemed to react to something. When they turned around to look, they could see that the Demi-god tier beast had arrived, and it had transformed its two hands into blades.

“The second option is we take the beast into a deeper subconscious, similar to where Oscar was. To do that, I think I have to touch it again.” Shiro said. However, round two just didn’t seem like it would be as easy with Raten rather than Sil.

---

Outside there was no such talk of what needed to be done. Fex being relatively close to where Sil, Shiro and the Demi-god tier beast was decided to stay nearby. Qi infused arrows were firing off towards them, and it was his job to make sure it didn’t touch the beast.

“Come on, we’re going to steal that beast back!” Agent 2 shouted, and all of the men soon ran forward.

“Of course, when we don’t have our superhuman boy with us, all these losers decide to turn up.” Fex’s face was scrunched up and annoyed because the Qi arrows were quite dangerous against him, and he had to be careful.

The soldiers were in combat with the members of Pure. As for the soldiers in the mechs knew that all they could do was stay where they currently were. Humans knew the many weaknesses of the mechs, unlike the Dalki, and they were already going up against the strongest members in the Shelter.

Without their mechs, and even with them, they were nothing compared to the others.

“Where the hell is your leader!” Joy shouted as she swung her blade and slammed the ground with her foot raising up a wall of earth between them.

“I don’t know. I thought he would have been here by now. Maybe he’s caught up in something.” Fex replied back.

As for Agent number two, two people stepped forward to battle with him, Longblade and Layla.

“I see you have a bow. Try to give me support as much as you can, and I will be the one to face him.” Longblade said as he charged forward. He swung his large black sword, and Agent 2 swung his strange weapon as well.

The two powerful forces collided, hitting each other mid-air, but a strange reaction came from Agent 2.

“It’s nice to meet you. Judging by that ridiculous number on your back, I can see you’re a high ranking member.” Longblade said. “It seems you’re a bit surprised by something. Is it perhaps that the strange power you have, isn’t working?”

That was precisely what was strange about it. Agent 2 could tell that the Qi that he had infused into his weapon wasn’t working at all. The first stage he used to power the cells in his body still worked, giving him a strong blow, but the second stage of Qi on the sword had completely disappeared.

‘Is it his weapon?’ Agent two thought and could soon feel the energy of an arrow coming from behind.

Stepping out of the way to avoid the arrow, he soon found it following him. The good thing was, the Qi that had gone from his sword now was able to come back.

‘It looks like I was right, but I never heard of such a sword. One that can nullify the effect of Qi before.’ Striking forward at the arrow, Agent 2 was expecting to destroy it with ease. Still, there was a bit of resistance to it, until his power eventually won out, destroying the head.

“Oh, a Qi infused arrow. When did you learn to use Qi as well, little Layla?” Agent two asked, looking in their direction. Originally with him here, he thought it would be an easy fight. He had already gotten rid



of one of the bigger annoyances, but it seemed like there were still a couple more annoying people he had to deal with.

'That's strange. Why is my heart beating fast just after that, and why do I feel a little hot. I should have recovered all my Qi energy?' Agent 2 thought as a strange feeling was coming over his body.

My Vampire System Chapter 1169: Pure's creation

It was a strange feeling coming over agent 2's body. He couldn't quite describe the feeling because he had never felt like this before. His body felt slightly weak, but his Qi was working just as much as it usually would have done.

'Did I not give myself enough time before I fully recovered?' He thought.

Before arriving, Agent 2 knew that the others would be in the area before they had arrived. It seemed like luck was on their side as they had someone on the inside that was reporting to them what was going on at the Shelter. Because of this, they knew that the beast had already moved.

Time wasn't on their side, so in order to recover his Qi quickly, Agent 2 did a taboo among those at Pure. However, he had done this more than once before, and his men were aware of the risks. He stole their Qi and added the energy to his.

The only thing was, forcefully removing Qi like so would take someone's real-life force, but it was the quickest way for them to recover. He was sure that he had recovered back to his top fighting shape, but now he wasn't so sure, judging by how he was feeling.

The problem was, he didn't have the pleasure or time of thinking it out. Longblade was already on him, making several slashes, one after the other without allowing for a breath. Agent 2 was able to block them all, but he was unable to find an opening.

'If I can't put the Qi in my weapon, he's just as strong as me. What the hell is that sword!' At the same time, two more arrows came his way, but it seemed like it was easy for him to deal with it this time. He opened the palm of one of his hand, and a strange energy was sent out towards them.

The second the invisible energy hit the arrows, they immediately fell to the ground.

'He can take care of my arrows that easily. I could change into my second form, but I don't think that would be much help with my shabby sword skills.'

Then there was no choice. She had to go to the third form. She soon found her body transforming as it grew larger, her bottom half changing into a serpent while her top half remained the same. Now, out from her mouth, the first thing she did was spit out a blue flame, placing it on the tip of her arrow. Firing this, she made sure that it stayed behind Longblade.

"Let it hit you!" She shouted.

Hearing this, Longblade allowed for the blue flame to hit his back, and he felt a surge of energy compared to before. Swinging his blade now when it collided against Agent 2, his hand was swung to the side further than before.

'What is this! After being hit by that girl, he suddenly got a post, and what is she right now?' He thought.

The blue flame had a buff effect, increasing one's strength by five percent. Now trying to improve their situation, Layla started to fire out arrows hitting all her fellow teammates, giving them the extra energy they needed. On top of this, for those that were injured, she would change to a green flame, giving them a new set of power.

'Things aren't looking too good. I need to get rid of her! She might prove to be a bigger annoyance than the others!' Agent 2 started to realise.

Layla was playing the supporting role but wasn't just supporting Longblade. She was able to support everyone with her arrows, telekinesis and strange flames made a good combination. In a way, this was far worse than someone who was strong. Even if Agent 2 won his battle, he would have to continue facing everyone else as well.

On top of that, the strange feeling that was coming over his body wasn't going away.

"I didn't think I would have to do this two times in a day. When was the last time I had to go this far? This is pissing me off!" Agent 2 shouted as he dug his weapon into the ground and a force of Qi disappeared outward. Soon energy could be seen forming in front of him, a glowing ball that appeared and went inward. As it did, Agent's 2 skin started to turn bright red.

A new force was now beaming off him. It was so strong that it nearly knocked Longblade off his feet. That was unless he didn't have his sword with him. Covering his front, the sword was able to disperse the energy as it went around.

'This power, can I really fight him as it goes on. The sword is a double-edged sword. It even disrupts me when trying to use my soul weapon as long as I'm touching it. I could change to another weapon, but it's the only advantage I have over him.'

The next second, pointing his weapon towards Longblade, agent 2 thrust it a few times, and five loud bangs were heard going off one after the other. No one could see anything, and it was only after a few seconds Longblade could feel the pain in his things.

Two large holes had appeared, and two more on his shoulder. If it wasn't for him holding his weapon upright, it seemed like the fifth would have pierced his head as well.

"Longblade!" Layla shouted as she went to fire Green arrows in an attempt to heal him, but before she could even reach him, Agent 2 already was in between the two of them.

"Now it's your turn!" Agent 2 said as he fired another shot again. Layla, seeing this, started to shrink her body. He had aimed for the head, hoping to kill her on the spot. With her body changing to the second form, the attack missed and hit the ceiling, making a hole.

Still, there was no worry in agent 2's eyes as he was ready to fire off more Qi blasts. Until a sudden pain was now felt in his chest. Sweat was now almost pouring from all over his body. He fell down to one knee, and Layla wanted to take advantage of this situation, so she struck him down, hoping to kill him in one blow.

Regardless, a simple wave of Agent 2 weapon hitting hers had sent her flying across the room. Layla had even reinforced her sword with Qi, but it didn't look like it made a difference.

'What is happening to my body? The pain is getting worse. It's almost as if it multiplied the second I used the fourth stage.' Agent 2 thought. Now closing his eyes, he started to meditate, trying to find the source, and he could see it. Something inside him was spreading through his body.

'It's already spread this far, but I didn't notice it before, and where did the- ' in the middle of his thoughts, he had figured it out. It could only be one. After having the fight with the Cursed faction leader, that was when the changes started to occur.

'I can get rid of the energy that's affecting me, but it's going to take some time.' Thinking about this, cancelling the fourth stage was for the best for now. He had already dealt with the strongest of the group here. 'I don't need that power to fight off this little runt. But I still need to buy some time.'

It was going to take an immense amount of concentration. Still, agent 2 needed to place his hand on his chest, using his Qi to remove the poison in his body, while also fighting one-handed and with a fraction of his powers.

There was a certain worry of how much Layla had improved. He could tell from the initial strike when he had underestimated her through the arrows, so he needed a plan, and he had come up with the perfect one.

"Layla, Layla, Layla." Agent 2 said with a big smile. "I never did like you or your mother, but for you, I feel a little sad. After all, you were someone she never wanted, and every time she looked at you, she would treat you with disgust."

Hearing this, Layla was being filled with anger. She didn't understand what he was talking about and tried to come charging in again. When the two swords collided this time, there seemed to be an equal power between the two.

"What's wrong, Layla!" Agent 2 continued to deflect the attacks. His plan of making her the aggressor had worked, all he needed to do was defend and heal himself. "Didn't your mother ever tell you the truth? I bet you always wondered. Why did she treat me this way? Aren't I her daughter?"

"Tell me, who's your father Layla? Have you ever met him before? Did she tell you the lie that she would come up with, that he was a fantasy novel writer?"

'Lie' She thought. What did he mean? Hearing this, she was losing the will to attack. Because she wanted to know the truth, but how could she trust the person that was attempting to kill her. However, who else would know about her father, the father who was a fantasy writer according to her mother.

"I guess I was bang on, you know it was only a rumour, but the story got passed around between the high ranking agents, and one day I saw the reaction of her face as it had been overheard. Now that I see it, it all makes sense. Layla, you were an accident, but not an accident as if you were planned. Oh no, it's much worse than that, for you see, Agent five always had a deep hatred for ability users because using their powers they had forced her, forced her to have a child. I'm sure you are old enough to know what I mean by this.

"And Imagine being your mother, having to look at you every day, and being reminded of that day. Reminded of why she hated ability users and why she decided to create Pure!" Agent 2 shouted, and at the same time, he had finally pulled out the strange purple energy from himself. Chucking it on the ground, his body could almost feel instant relief.

However, when he looked up at Layla, she stood there still, her arms by her side.

'No, is that the real reason why? The reason she created Pure, was because of...me..how I had come into the world...my father.'

He wasn't quite sure if he was seeing things, but a dark coloured smog started to surround her, and when she looked up, her eyes were glowing a dark purple.

'What is happening to her?'

My Vampire System Chapter 1170: The beast's pledge

Inside the humanoid beast's mind, both Raten and Shiro were standing opposite the Demi-god tier beast. Its two hands had changed into blades and for some reason Shiro felt like the beast looked even more eager to fight here compared to in the real world.

“Come on, attack it!” Shiro instructed the other, hoping that just like Sil, Raten would be there in a flash.

“What do you want me to do? Slap it to death?!” Raten shouted back, yet the next second the beast dashed forward thrusting with one of its arms. Seeing this Raten booted Shiro out of the way causing him to fall to the floor, whereas he leaned back just in time to avoid the first blow.

His reaction times were quick, and his face was scrunched up as he was frustrated at the situation.

“You damn beast!” Raten cursed as he went to punch its arm, only for a dagger to appear in his hand, slicing at the beast. Seconds before the dagger could reach the beast’s forearm, it transformed its hand into a shield blocking the blow. The beast then used its shield to bash Raten in the face, sending him a few feet into the air.

‘What’s wrong? Why isn’t he using his abilities here?’ Shiro wondered, but then again, the one that was in this mind space right now was Raten instead of Sil. However, he could see something in Raten’s hands. Two daggers that weren’t there before.

‘Think this is a mind space, and the daggers appeared when he went for the attack.’ Shiro scratched his head, trying to come up with how the minds worked.

Despite losing out in this first exchange, it didn’t take long for Raten to get up again and charge right in. He himself hadn’t even noticed the sudden appearance of the daggers, too focused on his desire to pay the beast for what it had done to him.

One dagger was thrown at the beast, yet it simply blocked with the still present shield arm. It then swung its bladed arm, but Raten slid underneath the beast’s legs and was now behind it. The next second he buried the dagger deep inside the humanoid beast’s back near its neck. Then he dragged it down half way before the beast moved again. Stepping away Raten now had nothing in his hands.

‘Wow, it looks like he’s good in close combat. His fighting style is completely different to Sil’s. Even though they look the same right now, I guess they really are two different people.’ Shiro analyzed. ‘But then how did he get those daggers in the first place? I don’t remember seeing them on him.’

“Tell me how the heck do I use my powers here!” Raten shouted at Sil. They had appeared when he wanted them, but now that he was out, he didn’t know how to get more.

“This here isn’t the real world. The two of us are currently inside the beast’s mind. You’ve already done it twice, just use your imagination or something!” Shiro explained, himself not completely sure about the rule. “Think of what weapon or what powers you want to use!”

This was the only thing Shiro could think of, when Raten needed it he thought of the weapons and they appeared in his hands. The only thing was it seemed like it was based on what the person could actually do in real life. Perhaps a limitation set by the person’s original mind itself.

Otherwise, the Demi-god tier beast could probably ilado something similar to its original form, and Raten could properly make anything come to mind. It was at that moment that lighting started to appear from his hands.

“So I can use any power that I can imagine, is that right?” Raten smiled. “I may not be as strong as Sil, but with that sort of power, I should still be able to beat this!” Two more daggers appeared in his hands, slightly larger than the last ones and with a more curved edge.

Sparks started to lighten up, most likely from a lightning ability, and Raten ran towards the beast unafraid. Shiro was just glad that things were working out for him at the moment.

The two were in a tough battle as the Demi-god tier best was faster than Raten, but for some reason he chose to try and fight toe to toe with the beast. During their fight, Shiro noticed something, that the beast seemed to avoid going for vital areas.

It used shallow cuts, or bashes with the shield. Its strikes were more aimed at areas to incapacitate Raten, but not in a lethal way.

‘Why is it doing this?’ He wondered.

Suddenly, Raten was able to get a clear strike in as he had been closely paying attention to the beast’s movements. He was making use of his experience in fighting and had managed to pierce one of the daggers right through the beasts chest.

He had gotten a hang of this world quicker than Shiro could ever imagine, as he threw blades, making them reappear in his hands, creating other weapons on the fly, even making them return to his hand.

Raten was like a sort of god in this space, most likely stronger than he could have ever been on the outside.

'Are all of Sil's friends such monsters?'

With the lightning dagger inside its body, Raten let out its powers inside the beast. Several little small white orbs that started to float from the ground. It was something Shiro had never seen before but it was clear it was due to what Raten had just done.

'What are these things?' Shiro thought as he reached out his hand. It looked harmless and in some way he could tell that it wouldn't do any harm to him as he touched it.

The second he touched it, his head felt heavy, as images started to flash through his head.

"We will make you stronger." A voice said, and he could see a man in a white suit. He could see a beast trapped in a container. It wasn't the Demi-god tier beast, but it had some resemblance to the one currently fighting Raten.

'Are these...memories?' Shiro theorised.

Now knowing that they wouldn't hurt him and what they were, Shiro was intrigued. It was too busy with Raten, so Shiro continued to touch the special white lights.

"Finally we have created our first Demi-god tier beast" The same old man was seen, but the beast itself was looking at someone else. A female doctor with round glasses who nodded.

'Who is that girl that the beast is looking at?'



Touching another memory, Sil had found one with her in it.

“I know, I don’t like what they are doing to you, either. Which is why I’m going to help you escape this place.” This time he could see that the female in white cloak was the only one in the room talking to the beast.

‘These memories I don’t think they are in order.’

The next scene was showing the Demi-god beast down in one of these tunnels, and the beasts all looking up to it. As if it was some type of king. Soon one came up to the stage, and stood directly in front of it. was ready to brace itself. At that moment, the Demi-god tier beat the beast, and pulled out the crystal.

Although no words were spoken here, through the memories Shiro was able to tell what was happening. The beasts sacrificed themselves for the sake of the Demi-god tier beast. They wanted to help it to get rid of the humans.

Looking through more and more memories, slowly Shiro was getting a clear picture of the events that had transpired and now he understood everything that was happening, at least so far.

The beast was originally a humanoid one from this planet, and had been captured by the military. They had run experiments trying to make it stronger. During that time, the beast got close to a scientist who disagreed with their methods, and wished to help it.

When the beast finally evolved, she created a situation that had allowed the Demi-god tier beast to escape. However, the beast seems to have remained, near the Shelter, still stopping the humans by attacking the mines and taking the crystals. In doing so, the other beasts were willing to sacrifice their lives and crystals in order for it to evolve once again.

What Shiro still didn’t understand was why the Demi-god tier beast was so obsessed with stopping the soldiers from mining the crystals, and why it didn’t attack humans.

There was one last memory and in touching this, Shiro finally found his answer.

The white doctor could be seen again, and in some other memories the two of them had conversed quite often, but this time she was shedding tears.

“I’m sorry about what we are doing. I didn’t know it was doing that.” She sniffled. “Okay, I’ll help you, but please promise me something. I know we are foolish and we don’t understand everything that is going on, but we are just scared and fighting for our survival, so please forgive us.”

After seeing the last message, Shiro somewhat understood, and just maybe there was a way for them to get through this, without the need to fight.

Shiro was sure of it, that they might be needed out there soon.

My Vampire System Chapter 1171: The fourth Evolution

‘No, that can’t be true! Mom, cared... she must have cared for me... if she didn’t then why would she have risked her life for me at the very end?’

‘There has to be another reason for how she treated me! Yes, it must have all been for the sake of Pure! To make me stronger, so I could take over the organisation one day... right?’

These haunting thoughts kept repeating themselves. Layla’s mind went over all her interactions with her mother, the images of those times vividly flashing before her eyes. They reminded her of all of the things she had tried to block out and those she had buried deep inside.

Layla couldn’t help but focus on Lucy’s face in all of those memories. The strange look on her face whenever daughter and mother had interacted. As it turned out, looking back, Layla realised that the few times her mother had told Layla anything about her father, like him being a fantasy writer, she had only done so while facing away.

Had she done so, because she hadn’t wanted to think about Layla’s father? Was Agent 2 right, that the father she knew she had was actually just something her mother had come up with, to hide the truth?

A smog of negative emotions started to spill out from Layla's body. Normally only her subrace should be able to perceive them, yet they had seemingly reached such an intensity that those around her could see hers and all took a careful step back, afraid since they had no idea what it was.

Her mind had become numb and her eyes were now glowing a slight purple. Layla had still been in her second form, yet she slowly started to change. Her giant tusk-like fangs started to shrink into smaller ones that could fit in her mouth and the horns on her head also started to grow smaller, until they were barely visible through her hair.

In an instant all the smog flew back into her through her mouth, her nose and even her ears. It was a scary sight how that foreign substance appeared to have invaded the girl. The next moment red marks began climbing up from her neck and down her arms, as if all the veins in her body were now pulsating and alive.

Everyone stared at her with a weapon in their hands, yet they all shared one thought at this time. 'What a beauty'. Her skin now looked softer than snow, her hair was flowing lighter than air and even the red markings seemed to form a sort of tattoo which further added to an exotic charm.

"What's happened to her?" Nathan asked, looking at the one vampire in the room that might have an answer. To a lot of them, Layla changing forms came as a shock. Still they held back from attacking her, choosing to trust her as a member of the Cursed faction. As long as she was helping them, they could always try to figure out things after this fight.

Unfortunately, they weren't completely sure if everything would go that way. Layla had started emitting a strange energy, which made all of their legs shake slightly. Then, there was also the look on the girl's face. Her eyebrows were deeply furrowed and her mouth was slightly open baring her fangs.

Luckily, the pure anger and frustration was currently aimed at the one person responsible for her change.

"I have no idea. I don't know much about Hannyas, so this must be one of her forms." Fex replied. Of course, he didn't tell him that this was the best case scenario. Truth be told, he was worried that the pure anger and bloodlust coming from her, had made her enter a state similar to a Bloodsucker.

To be on the safe side, he made use of this moment when everyone was distracted to attach his strings to Longblade. The Colonel was injured and unable to stand, bleeding out slightly, but the vampire could still hear a heartbeat.

However, if he was to be caught up in whatever was about to happen, today might very well end up being his last day. Before Layla started to act, the vampire pulled him out, and placed him down by the side of Shiro and the others. He proceeded to carefully move over, all while keeping his gaze on the furious girl.

'Layla, please don't make this into a situation where we will have to deal with you as well.' Fex silently prayed, as he readied Agent 11 for the worst case scenario.

Layla herself would be unable to explain what was happening, but one thing was for certain, she had just finished transforming into another form. A form that no one had ever seen before. The one thing all her Hannya forms had in common was the need for powerful negative emotions.

Layla had become quite proficient in controlling her emotions and harnessing them to help her evolve into any of the three at will. To do this she would usually recall a painful memory creating negative emotions in herself.

However, this went beyond any negative emotions Layla had ever felt before, she was experiencing pain beyond what she could have ever imagined which had allowed her to unlock a fourth evolution. One which should be called the True Hannya.

'No wonder, such a bastard has joined the Cursed faction!' Agent 2 thought. 'We would have been better off, if Lucy had allowed us to just get rid of her. Well at least I got rid of the poison during her temper tantrum, but this doesn't look like it's going to be easy.'

Unwilling to take any more risks while fighting against those abominations from the Cursed faction, Agent 2 was forced to activate the fourth stage of Qi once more. He banged his sword into the ground and his skin started to turn red.

The usual energy that was felt from the sudden surge in Qi was felt by everyone there. Those who had been engaged with Pure and had already stopped their fights during Layla's transformation, moved out of the way so they wouldn't be affected by the overwhelming force.

Ultimately, only Layla stood her ground not moving, instead as the wave of energy came towards her, she opened her mouth and let out a loud shrieking sound, almost pushing the energy back. The others were frozen in place as the sound pierced their ears.

“This is like that damn Banshee’s scream!” Fex thought doing his best to cover his ears, yet his sharper senses turned out to be a detriment this time. He could feel blood flowing out of them.

The space between Layla and Agent 2, as well as the air itself, was shaking from the colliding powers.

‘How is it possible to use sound as a medium for Qi? Just what sort of freak has she turned into?!’ Agent 2 was baffled, but he didn’t have the time to think about it.

Instantly, he started to use his weapon similar to a gun, firing off quick sharp blasts of Qi. Layla’s movements were still as fast as before, allowing her to evade three of the shots. Unfortunately the fourth one managed to hit her forearm.

However, the blow hardly did anything to Layla apart from leaving a dent marking on her arm.

‘That’s impossible! Even that Cursed faction leader was left with a giant hole! Wait... no how, could someone as young as her have even more Qi than me?!’ Slight signs of panic started to emerge on Agent 2’s face.

Not giving him any time to rest, Layla retaliated with several black balls, before she too dashed forward. The Pure leader had no clue what these black balls would do if he came into contact, but whatever it was, it couldn’t be good

The fourth stage of Qi had reinforced his whole body, allowing him to move at the same speed as the girl. The only thing he didn’t account for was that Layla still had access to her normal ability, so despite all of the balls missing, she changed the direction of the closest one, making it connect.

The second it touched Agent 2, chains started to form from the ball and burrowed into ground. These were the Spiritual Chains she was able to use as a Namanari Hannya. The Pure leader tried to break free

with his strength, but these were no normal chains, each of them were reinforced with the extra power of Qi.

'Damn this, I can't move my hands or weapon!'

Layla was already upon him and swung her sword vertically aiming to slash his head off in a single strike. The sword touched the outer layer of his skin but was unable to pierce through. Agent 2 had focused most of Qi there to prevent the otherwise fatal injury.

"I don't know what type of deal you must have made to become this type of monster." The Pure Agent suddenly smiled. "And I don't know how you were able to obtain this level of Qi at your age, but it looks like your strength is still nowhere near the level of mine!"

The chains started to weaken and disappear, which would allow Agent 2 to continue his own attack. However, Layla didn't distance herself from him, on the contrary. Her free hand grabbed onto his shoulder and she opened her jaw wider than would be humanly possible, making the girl resemble a snake about to devour its prey.

The next second, fiery flames came out from her mouths scorching Agent 2 from point blank range. The flames were strong and lit up the whole area of the cave, melting part of the area behind the Pure leader. Despite this, a kick suddenly came forward aimed at her stomach, which sent her flying back.

The flames soon died down and revealed Agent 2, his hair burnt off, and several burn marks on his face, contorted into an expression of immense pain. He had concentrated most of Qi to prevent the sword from cutting off his head, leaving him with far less to block the sudden and unexpected flame attack against his face.

"You b\*tch! I planned to kill you, but that would be letting you off easily! You only deserve to be tortured for the rest of your miserable life and I shall make sure to make you crave the sweet embrace of death!"

Fex was impressed with Layla's capabilities so far. She wasn't as fast as a Vampire Leader in this form, and her strikes didn't seem as powerful as his father's or Bryce's, but her versatile skills made her a foe he would never wish to face himself.

From what he had seen, her current form appeared to be a mixture of the other three she had displayed before. She was still able to use her Spiritual chains, but also keep her second form's speed and power, and now he had also seen Layla use the fire breath from her third form.

Without an Inspect skill, Fex didn't realise that she was in fact even stronger than that. All of the Qi inside her body was currently running wild. Just as Quinn had stated, her body was unable to handle the large amounts of Qi that her mother had left her with, but the same wasn't true for this form. Every one of her attacks had been amplified with a massive amount of Qi.

Nevertheless, Fex was very concerned about the look in her eyes. Her now purple eyes didn't seem alive, merely focused on one thing, getting revenge. However, would defeating Agent 2 be enough to quell her anger?

Layla had quickly recovered but there was a visible wound around her stomach. Noticing this her right arm started to spew a green flame which she pressed against the hole. It healed at a speed that the onlookers would follow with the naked eye.

The next second she charged back in. Not backing down, and now filled with anger himself Agent 2 came at her.

Suddenly, another scream filled the area. However, this one wasn't human.

My Vampire System Chapter 1172: Clash of Titans

Suddenly, the onlookers saw a third figure heading towards the center of the area where Layla and Agent 2 were charging towards. At first they could only make out the outline of the new challenger, making them wonder who exactly would be crazy enough to join the fight.

When Fex looked back, he discovered that the Demi-god tier beast they had come here to subdue had disappeared. No, more accurately speaking, it had just moved and was about to join the clash of those titans.

'Why didn't it just flee? Now was the perfect time, so why does it look like it wants to fight?' Fex wondered as he noticed Shiro collapsed on the ground. Sil was still touching his head while trying to recover or get over what was happening. He was dazed looking out of the room, and something in his head felt a bit strange.

"Sil, buddy, I need you to tell me what happened." Fex requested, while gently checking if he was okay. He was breathing, but his consciousness didn't seem to have fully returned yet.

Layla and Agent 2's weapons clashed in the air. The humanoid beast had stopped a few meters before that point, but instead it had skidded on the floor and sliced at the legs off both fighters.

In the end, a Demi-god tier beast was still one of the strongest beasts in existence and the power in its body was more than enough to overcome their Qi defenses, causing them both to stumble to the ground.

The next second the Pure leader felt a large shield whack him across the face and a kick in his chest followed. Everything had happened so fast, and so unexpected that Agent 2 honestly hadn't even understood what happened.

The Demi-god tier beast slashed downward at the lying Agent 2, the Pure leader quickly thrust his weapon a couple of times towards the beast, hitting him in the chest and shoulder. Although it had left behind circular holes in its body, a strange earth quickly formed over them again as if the attacks had never occurred.

Meanwhile, the Demi-god tier beast pierced Agent 2's shoulder, and was cutting through his flesh drawing blood, but the sound of someone else approaching made it turn around its head. That's when it could see who it was... and the sword strike aimed at its head.

Changing its arm into a shield, the beast blocked the attack, yet the strength behind the attack was so powerful that it had to remove the sword from Agent 2's wound to use it to support itself.

"Stay out of this!" The beast growled, as it slashed at Layla's sword, only to see her mouth opening. Instinctively feeling that it was in danger, the beast placed both of its hands together to form a giant tower shield, right before the flames hit it.



By the time the flames eventually died down, Agent 2 had already rolled to the side and gotten up. He looked to be in a terrible condition, but his posture made it clear that he wouldn't run away from this fight.

"What the hell is happening? How has this turned into a three way fight between them all?" Rafer asked the question that was on everyone's mind.

As someone who had personally fought against the humanoid beast, Avion noticed something about it was different. It was still undeniably strong, but its fighting style was completely different. Its movements flowed better, and if it could have been described as passive and careful about conserving someone's life, now it was aggressive and out for the kill.

Finally, someone who could shed some light on this situation came to. Only it wasn't Sil, but Shiro. His eyes opened only ever so slightly, but for Fex who was close to him, he noticed immediately.

"Shiro, are you okay? We're a bit short on time, you need to tell me what's going on!" Fex demanded to know. He didn't want to be harsh, but every second was precious.

Fortunately, Shiro was able to see the fight without having to move his head. He had already been worried something like this might happen.

"We...succeeded." Shiro whispered barely audibly. "That's...Raten"

"I'm on your side you two horned b\*tch!" Raten shouted towards Layla. It was only when he took a closer look at her, that he noticed the lifeless look behind her eyes. The Hannya was fighting more on instinct than actual conscious thoughts. While her subconsciousness or instincts made her body act, her mind was still trapped, surrounded by her own memories and the pain and suffering from the realisation that she didn't really know anything about her past.

'Should we help?' Fex wondered. 'Can we even help? Going up against one of them would require most of us, but more?'

The three titans stood in a type of triangle formation, cautious about who to attack and who to defend against. For a short moment they remained in this Mexican standoff. The onlookers all seemed to have

the same thoughts again, whether or not they should intervene. The Pure members had realised that they were on the losing side, so they decided to move and stay behind their leader.

None of them showed any signs of wanting to come close to the centre of the room for risk of getting caught up into this mess.

'I don't understand why the Demi-god tier beast has joined the fight as well, but this isn't good. This whole thing has gotten way out of hand. Should I just abort the mission?' Agent 2 was pondering over a possible strategic retreat, but before he could come to a decision Layla decided to act, forcing Raten and therefore Agent 2 to do the same.

None of the onlookers actually knew how incredibly powerful that Demi-god tier beast actually was. After how easily Sil had managed to take it down, it had created the impression that it wasn't that strong. In reality, Sil was just that much of a monster to be able to take down the Demi-god tier beast.

Now that Raten was in control and didn't shy away from hurting others, it was a real powerhouse.

"Get a grip! My patience is running thin, next time you attack me, I'm going to slash your neck!" Raten shouted, but found himself locked by her strange chains, unable to move.

Seeing this, Agent 2 decided to go in for the attack, but soon had to jump back as more of the black floating balls flew his way. It was unclear whether Layla had perceived his threat, or had just remembered that there was someone else who deserved her wrath more, but she changed her attention towards the Pure leader.

Finally, Sil was coming to as well, the pain in his head had stopped. He immediately looked over to the others fighting, and could see such skillful fighting skills coming from Raten.

"He's back, he's finally back!" Sil mumbled, smiling more than anything, seemingly unaware of the dangerous situation they were currently in.

"Sil, you need to stop them! NOW!!" Fex shouted at him, grabbing him by the shoulders. The worst case scenario was one of them dying. If Raten ended up killing Layla or vice versa, the vampire would be unable to explain things to Quinn. Their entire operation of helping Sil would have failed.

Fex didn't even dare to imagine what Quinn would do if one of his friends perished here.

"Raten, won't hurt Layla!" Sil stated calmly, without a hint of a doubt. "And now that Raten is back, I won't hurt him ever again!"

'We don't have time for this crap!' Fex thought angrily, looking at the Sil who continued to have a goofy smile on his face. It was then that he realised that Sil was an unusual person. Someone who was truly selfish and only cared for certain people.

Unfortunately, Layla wasn't one of them. Fex was convinced that if it had been Shiro, Borden, Vorden, Quinn or Raten, Sil would have acted in a heartbeat, but now that Raten was back, it was clear he didn't care what happened to the girl.

"Fine, get rid of Agent 2 then!" Fex screamed at him.

Shiro, still not comprehending the situation, looked over to Sil, but his friend had overused his ability. He had barely been able to speak and right now he couldn't even lift a finger.

'If it's like this, will I have to get involved?' Fex contemplated. He might be strong but against these monsters, he was certain he wouldn't be able to make it out unscathed and he was sure how severe his injuries would be.

All three of them seemed to be preparing for an almighty attack to decide the outcome, no longer wanting to 'play around'.

Layla had conjured a total of eight black spheres that were now surrounding her, yet for the moment they remained unmoving. She was concentrating on her ability trying to move them with one hand, at the same time.

Raten had put both of his hands together and was forming a large weapon, seemingly a scythe.

Lastly, Agent 2 was putting more and more Qi into his weapon to the point it started to become redder than his own body.

All three started to run into each other in the centre of the room. The onlookers could care less about who would win this power struggle, they were all too afraid of the consequence. It would be impossible for the area to not cave in, yet it was too late to stop them.

“I’m sorry, but all of you need to calm down!” A person who had appeared out of nowhere shouted. Throwing out his arms and kicking in front of him, he pushed all three back, their attacks dissipating mid flight. The entire area rumbled as they got buried into the wall.

Fortunately, after a few seconds it stopped without any cave in, making everyone let out a sigh of relief. Surprisingly, there was one clear winner in this major battle, and it was none other than the person left standing alone in the middle.

“Quinn, you made it!” Fex shouted. However, something was different about him, how’d he get so strong he was able to do that to all of them.

My Vampire System Chapter 1175: A grand return

The sounds of alarm sounded out from the lab-like facility, informing the rest of the Shelter that something was going on. Logan and the humanoid beast stood side by side, aware that their situation was getting worse by the second.

‘The army still has a gripe with the Cursed faction, so they will use this incident against us. I can’t let them catch me on top of that, otherwise everything will be against us.’ Logan analysed his situation.

Although Logan’s training meant he was more skilled than the average soldier now, getting out of a military place with countless ability users, especially without killing or injuring any of them too much would pose quite the problem. He was just glad that the beast by his side seemed to agree that they had to work together.

The first one to attack was one of the soldiers in the front by using his telekinesis ability to throw a heavy black ball, a beast weapon, towards the duo. Lifting up his Dalki arm, Logan easily grabbed the ball, stopping its rotation without breaking a sweat.

“Remember, you were the ones who attacked first without giving me any chance to explain myself.” Logan stated as he looked at his spiders that had been recording the whole situation. “Everything I do now, is just an act of self-defense.”

Taking a small step back and pivoting his other foot, he pitched the ball back at a speed faster than the telekinesis user had chucked it at them. At that moment, another soldier came forward, this one with a hardening ability, that he used to intercept the ball. The force behind it made him slide a few feet back, but otherwise he remained unharmed.

Logan had used this time to inform his partner in crime about his plan. A little spider had hopped on to the beast’s shoulder, and had whispered a few words to it through its microphone. At the same time Logan had summoned many of the spiders to his position and was covering his whole body in a defensive armour as the soldiers came towards them firing off their abilities and drawing their bladed beast weapons

The humanoid beast by his side was quick and light on its feet thanks to its wind-like powers. It was able to move around the place avoiding the attacks, and was great at utilising Logan’s suggested hit and run strategy. Even better for them, the majority of the soldiers had prioritized the beast, aware of its importance to the scientist.

However, there were still some that focused on Logan. With his whole body covered in a special defence gear he was confident in fighting off that number. His experience fighting against Brock several times turned out to be very helpful, as Logan was getting better at predicting their next moves, avoiding their strikes.

When the opportunity presented itself, he grabbed one of the soldiers with his Dalki hand. Logan didn’t like doing this, but his situation wasn’t exactly one where he could abstain from using such dirty tactics. Since they were allies the other soldiers hesitated attacking Logan and his human body shield.

Unsure what to do, some of them circled around him, attempting to attack him from multiple sides, hopefully rescuing his hostage as well. Alas, Logan would summon his laser firing towards them to incapacitate them. This made the soldiers freeze up, as they were unsure what to do.

Although busy with his own set of soldiers, the spiders kept Logan up to date in regards to the beast's situation. Two thirds of the soldiers had gone after it and had managed to somewhat trap it at the back of the room.

"Now!" Logan shouted into his helmet that was covering his head, and the little spider forwarded it to the beast. Putting their plan into motion, the Cursed faction member chucked the one he had held in his arm at the group of soldiers in front of him to create an opening. His suit started to change from the defensive type to the speed type starting with his feet.

Running ahead, Logan had a little surprise for them all. Using his soul weapon, he turned some of the terminals into little Mech soldiers of his own to hold them back. At the same time the giant tubes and machine from above were attacking them all.

It came as a complete shock and they were unaware if there were people piloting these little Mechs. Using this moment of confusion the beast used its wind powers to propel itself on to the side of the wall again. Using its strong powerful legs it pushed itself off the wall and started to spin.

Both the beast and Logan were headed off in the same direction, towards the exit.

They had managed to reach the exit, and when turning around they could see all the soldiers that were mostly still at the back of the room. This had been part of Logan's plan all along. Perhaps they could have lasted against the soldiers for a while with their skills, but fighting so many of them at once they were bound to lose, and being chased around the facility wasn't a good idea either.

Placing his hand on the terminal, the door started to close. A few soldiers with a speed ability ran around the small mechs that Logan had built, but the King tier humanoid beast dealt with them by firing off strikes of air. On a closer look it looked to be a little different to just a person having a wind ability.

With its beast-like body, being a humanoid and elemental type, it had all the traits of growing into something strong if it continued to evolve up the ranks.

The door eventually closed, and Logan had naturally changed the access code.

“It will be a long time until they get out of that one, but I’m sure there will be others outside and inside this place trying to get to us.” Logan said.

Fortunately, he had left behind some spiders in the hallways of each floor, allowing him to keep an eye on how many people were moving where, when and how. At the time, Logan had been too busy fighting the King tier beast so he failed to notice the soldiers who had entered the room first, but now he could use half his screen to observe the situation.

“We should escape into the tunnel. I’ve overheard those humans speak about another one of our kind that has escaped. He is supposed to be far stronger than me and seems to be on his way to reach his next form.” The beast shared its opinion.

Hearing this, Logan could only assume that this beast was talking about the formerly Legendary tier beast that had evolved and escaped. Did the two of them know each other? It wouldn’t surprise Logan too much if the scientists had brought both types together to see how they would react.

“My team should currently be looking for him. Maybe we should just find a place to hide until we can contact them?” Logan suggested. He didn’t like going into the tunnels, as he didn’t have enough information on them. There was also the possibility of them missing Quinn and the others.

Even though the beast trusted him for now, Logan wasn’t sure how long it would take for him to realise that it wasn’t one of its kind. For now they remained in a tough situation together, so he was hoping the beast would agree after seeing the success of his last plan.

Getting out of the facility wasn’t exactly the problem with the use of Logan’s spiders and the beast’s wind ability. There were a few times where they had to move through a certain area with great speed, and the beast helped Logan by taking him on his back and rushing through some areas. At the same time, Logan was able to slow down those in the facility, not just by watching them, but messing with their systems locking them in certain rooms.

Eventually, they exited through an emergency door and headed towards where Logan thought Fex would be, on the roof of the main military base. Unfortunately, Fex was nowhere to be seen, only the remains of the coffin, yet without Agent 11. On top of that, although the soldiers seemed to be busy dealing with them at first, they soon were moving towards a particular station for some reason.

“The one you mentioned doesn’t seem to be here. It might be better for us to part ways here.” The beast said, ready to move out. “While the humans are distracted I will be able to escape easily.”

“Wait!” Logan shouted, as he looked in the distance and could see it. Using his helmet, he zoomed in a distance to see what was happening, and that’s when he could see Quinn, Longblade and all the others exiting one of the tubes.

The beasts wondering what was going on, stood on the edge and looked out. It had great eyesight and could exactly see what the commotion was. Then the next thing that happened had shocked them both, for after the two of them had come out, a mud like humanoid figure came out after all of them.

Seeing this, the humanoid King tier beast realised that he would have to change its plans, while Logan was smiling on the inside. It looked like they had succeeded.

— —

Quinn and the others had arrived at the transportation area. They were in the first vehicle while at the back the Mechs were following them being transported on some type of rail system. As long as the robots feet weren’t injured, they could attach themselves to the rails and travel upward as well.

Seeing the vehicle and through the glass who was in it. All the soldiers started to cheer thinking that they had successfully captured the beast. For the time being, Fex had tied up the beast with his string, so the Earthborn group would believe they had captured the beast. Letting Raten accompany them without it, would just be a recipe for disaster.

Exiting from the place, the people cheered, yet Longblade was quickly taken away to be treated. Just as they were about to take Longblade away, he gestured for Quinn to come over.

“We will have a meeting about your request and what you plan to do with the Demi-god tier beast when I am back up and running. It shouldn’t be too long, but in the meantime Rafer will look after you.”

When their group stepped off from the transportation vehicle though, all of a sudden a group of soldiers surrounded them. The Sergeant who had been left in command drew his weapon towards the Cursed faction.



“What is this crap?!” Raten grumbled dissatisfied. “What’s the point of tying me up, if they were going to attack us anyway?”

“Sergeant Till, what is the meaning of this!” Rafer asked. “Did you not hear what Colonel Longblade just said? I am the one in charge of them until he gets better. Put your weapons down and explain yourself at once!”

“No can do, Sir!” Till refused to comply. “Not until we figure out why one of their own broke into our research facility and freed that special beast we had left. Worst of all, we have reports claiming that the one responsible had displayed traits similar to a Dalki.”

“We already know the V and the Dalki are working together, so this case seems no different! They are the ones who have killed Head General Innu! They could be doing the same to us right after helping complete this task!”

From the sounds of it, everyone could tell that the person that had been described could only be Logan. They were wondering what exactly had happened while they were away.

“Don’t point your swords at my brother! you will regret it!” Sil shouted at the men who were coming in close.

This comment only worsened the already hostile situation. Quinn had been looking forward to catching a break after having nearly been blown to bits. Who could have imagined that he would have to sort out such a situation before he could even take a single step on the surface.

My Vampire System Chapter 1176: A secret deal

Rafer could actually see the fear in his fellow soldiers’ eyes, however Longblade had entrusted him with the Cursed faction’s safety while in their base. No one had expected Pure to value the humanoid Demi-god tier beast to the point they had sent out their second strongest fighter. Without the Cursed faction’s help, Longblade and all of them would have perished, instead of only sustaining a few injuries.

"I understand all your worries, but Colonel Longblade is still the highest ranked soldier and leader of this base! The injuries he received were not from anyone of the Cursed faction. In fact, all of us owe our lives to them!" Rafer explained to Sergeant Till, as he looked back at the Demi-god tier beast and Sil, wishing the young boy had kept his mouth shut.

He was still unsure what exactly had happened to the Demi-god tier beast for it to cooperate with them, as not much had been explained to the Earthborn group. From what little they had told him, it appeared that after subduing it, that Boy named Shiro had tamed it with an ability similar to Mona's.

On top of that, he was more worried about the soldiers pointing their weapons at Sil and Raten. If they had seen how easily the boy had subdued the beast, they wouldn't be so brazen.

"If you are truly afraid about their intentions, I shall accompany the members of the Cursed faction to a safe house for the time being. They have bravely fought against not only the Demi-god tier beast, but have also defeated Pure. The least we can do is thank them by allowing them to rest! Me and my team will keep a watch on them until the Colonel has recovered. Any objections, SERGEANT Till?"

Till looked at Rafer for a few seconds, and at those from the Cursed faction. As someone who had been very loyal to Innu, he had shared his idol's suspicions in regards to the Cursed faction. After learning they had broken into the lab he had actually been worried that something had happened below as well.

However, as he hadn't been there, he had to take Rafer's word for it. At least it was true that the Colonel had come back alive. "...fine, but the Demi-god tier beast has to be returned to the facility until we get to the bottom of this whole mess!"

"No!" Sil immediately stood in front of the still tied humanoid beast. "He stays with us. If any of you try to take him away, I will make you pay!"

Some of the soldiers smirked at his threat. How could one person possibly stop them all, but the concerned look on Rafters and Jay's face that had seen what happened said it all.

"The first Mech squad will also guard the safe house. If the Demi-gods tier beast stays with them, you will have my men ready to protect the place. This should be enough, right?" Avion intervened, also on the behalf of Quinn and the others.

With a few high ranking members vouching for the Cursed faction it was getting harder and harder for Till to refuse, without turning this into a personal matter. He thought at least one of the men that had gone down with them would be on his side, especially Jay who didn't trust the Cursed as much as he did.

'Just what happened down there for them to put so much trust in this group?' He wondered.

"... take them all to the safe house. They will be on watch at all times until Longblade is ready." Till ordered, not hiding his frustration about the outcome of this situation.

--

The group was safely being escorted to the safe house, and Rafer and the others made sure to surround the exhausted members of the Cursed faction, acting as a sort of buffer to prevent anyone from doing anything stupid.

Many of the guards on duty didn't exactly trust them and Rafer wanted to prevent anyone from escalating this entire situation. Whatever Quinn and the others might be, it was clear to him that they were on the same side as them. Instead of the infighting the soldiers should focus on the war against the Dalki in his opinion.

Although it was referred to as a safe house, that place had originally been designed to detain soldiers who had gone too far. As such, it was more like a report prison, although it could also be used to capture any members of Pure.

Entering the place wasn't as bad as they had initially thought. There was a large room that would have been able to fit around thirty or so people inside. There was also a kitchen with working water inside and several rooms for them to sleep in. The only thing was, the place didn't have any form of entertainment, or windows for that matter.

The entrance was the only way in and out, a really secure and sturdy door with several guards placed in front.

"Do they really think this place can hold us if the whole thing isn't made for glathrieum? I mean even if we couldn't destroy the door, we could just break some of the walls instead." Fex said, still frustrated at

the kind of welcome they had received after saving everyone's butt. =“Let's just wait things out. Logan must have had his reasons for doing what he did, no need to add fuel to the fire.”

However, Till had left twenty of his own foot soldiers as guards. The soldiers had the whole building complex surrounded on all ends. As for Avion's Mech team, other than their leader, everyone else got replaced so his guys could get some rest, but only after collecting their missing teammate that was found safely in the hanger.

Not wanting to do anything else, Quinn decided they would wait for Longblade to wake up. In the meantime they would discuss what exactly would happen between them.

“Come on get me out of these damn things!” Raten demanded, as he was swinging his body around. Currently he was in his mud like form, since they had learnt that the mud was actually what the beast powers allowed him to control. His real body would avoid being hurt and he could constantly replace the mud, while his true body was his weak point underneath.

“Oh please, we all know you could break out of it yourself!” Fex argued, but he undid the strong binding, knowing full well how strong the beast was from when he had fought it for a few seconds.

“Fex, what exactly were you doing down there in the first place, weren't you meant to stay with this guy?” Shiro asked, pointing at Agent 11 who was in the corner still wriggling about.

Unless there had been any stragglers, Agent 11 was now the sole survivor after Agent 2 had consumed the rest. Due to him being wrapped up like the Demi-god beast they had just assumed he was part of the Cursed faction along with them.

The one perplexed by everything going on was Nathan. He wasn't a true member of the Cursed faction but for the time being was being treated as one, and he found it odd how all of these people acted with each other. So he just stood at the back on his own and let the situation play out.

‘How, how do these people get along with each other and get things done?’ Nathan wondered.

Fex went on to tell his tale of how he had stolen a Mech from the others in order to go down underground, and then went on to explain his battle with the beasts. Although Fex had been unable to

get any information out from the double digit Agent, at least they still had a hold of him which was the good thing about this story.

“It was a good thing you saved Avion’s life. After what Logan did, we are going to need all the people we can on our side to solve this diplomatically.” Layla said.

“Layla, I wanted to ask, what the hell happened to you back then? I never knew you were so strong. If I hadn’t seen it myself I would have never believed you could fight the second strongest Pure Agent toe to toe. Heck, I doubt I could do that even with a puppet. Has your subclass always been this strong?” Fex excitedly spoke.

Quinn was also inclined to learn more about what exactly had happened to her. Layla started to explain, nervously rubbing her arm up and down as if she didn’t really want to recall such a situation.

“Quinn told me that my body has a lot more Qi than is usual. I just haven’t figured out how to access and use most of it. However, when I was in that form, it had come to me naturally. But... I don’t know if I can do it again. I’m not even sure I want to use it again. I-I wasn’t really myself and I’m afraid I could hurt any of you, if I lose control again.”

Fex assured her that it surely just was something she had to get used to. The vampire then went on to describe in great detail to Quinn just how amazing and crucial Layla had been in the fight against Pure, since she seemed to have downplayed her importance. Hearing it all Quinn was quite surprised, this new form was able to match Agent 2 when he hadn’t been able to before his boost.

It seems like her mother really had pulled through at the end. After the discussion between them had died down and they had shared all of their experiences, Quinn decided to get in contact with the one person that could shed some light on why they were in this mess in the first place, Logan.

Through the mask it didn’t take long for them to get an answer either.

“Logan, what happened and where are you currently?” Quinn asked.

“Don’t worry, I’m safe. It looks like the soldiers have stopped actively looking for us, and have started to just patroll around the facility. Quinn, I apologise for all the trouble I have caused you. However I think I

can fix this, I have already contacted Sam about the situation, and he is currently doing everything he can to get you out of the situation.” Logan explained.

Honestly, Quinn wasn't too worried about their situation. From what he had gathered Longblade was a good person, so Quinn thought they would be understanding about a few things.

“I need to tell you some matters that have happened though, at the moment, we are observing your location.”

Paying attention, Quinn focused on the word 'We', the only person that wasn't here was Logan, so who could be the other one?

Logan then went on to recount his experience from the moment they had split up, and how the humanoid King tier beast, who had wished to save his comrade was currently trapped with him. It certainly was a strange and difficult position to be in, but not the worst one.

“I think we can do something about it. Make sure to remain hidden and we will meet up with you guys at midnight. Let's meet outside the Shelter west from here, I will contact you later for more details.’ Quinn said having come up with a plan.

He didn't quite want to tell the others what he had planned to do yet, but just explained to Raten, Shiro, and Sil that they would be leaving this place, around midnight and for them to get ready.

During this time, the group was so relaxed that they decided to get some nice shut eye for the rest of the night. All of them had worked hard, however, Shiro had approached Quinn who was up against the wall in the corner of the room looking at everyone.

“Quinn, I need to talk to you. I know we're going to have a meeting with Longblade and the others but I think it's important for you to know this before then.” Shiro said with a concerned look on his face. He stared in the direction of where Raten was in his beast form, talking to Sil as the two of them caught up.

Quinn didn't really have much in common with Raten, he hardly even knew who he was, the one he was more concerned about bringing back had always been Vorden. Now knowing that Logan was with another humanoid beast, although a weaker one they could bring him back as well.

“Go ahead.” Quinn asked.

Shiro gulped before replying.

“Raten isn’t alone in the body. The situation is similar to how it had been with Sil, only that the beast is still active in its body right now. It can take over Raten whenever it wants to. The only reason why it hasn’t so far, is because I struck a deal with It. I’m sorry, I didn’t ask you beforehand, but I kinda promised the beast we would do something for it.” Shiro smiled nervously.

Judging by the look on Shiro’s face, this deal wasn’t anything simple.

My Vampire System Chapter 1177: Finally Returned

After listening to the content of the deal Shiro and the Demi-god tier beast had made, Quinn didn’t consider it to be as bad as the other had made it out to be. In a way, they might even be able to use this information to strike a deal with the humanoid King tier beast.

“Thank you for letting me know, and don’t stress yourself too much about it. I believe we can solve the situation. It just means that I might need to put in a special request to someone.” Quinn replied with a smile, which calmed Shiro’s initial worries.

After all, if they were unable to complete the request, Shiro was sure that the beast would eventually end up rebelling, and then they would have to go through the same mess they had just been through all over again.

Soon, the others started to fall asleep one by one. Quinn noticed that every sixty minutes one soldier would open the door and check in on them. From the looks of discomfort, they seemed to belong to Sergeant Till. Fortunately, they appeared to have been instructed not to stir up any trouble, so after confirming that everyone was still inside they would quickly leave.

After nightfall, this patrol had changed to every two hours

As long as they came back within that time limit, preferably within one hour, in case they would come back earlier, there should be no problem. There was still some time before Quinn needed to leave, and he started to think back, back to when he had used the Inspect skill on the strange sword that belonged to Longblade.

After the Quest information had popped up, Quinn had taken a closer look at the sword details, yet he was unable to find anything too strange about it. The most prominent thing had been the marking on the sword of a singular large eye with wings.

Unfortunately, his system hadn't revealed anything else. Still, it was the first real hint he had discovered. Another strange thing was that the system hadn't even assigned the sword a tier ranking. Back when Longblade had gifted him the indestructible katana weapon, he had done so because he had claimed to have a weapon of a similar tier that suited him better.

Quinn was sure that he had been talking about this blade. Based on its strength and strong passive skill, Longblade must have assumed it to be of at least that tier. Its sharpness was definitely not worse than the indestructible katana.

'I wonder if something would happen if I took the sword to that tablet. That is where I got the quest in the first place. Maybe the voice could give me some information on the sword. When using Inspect, it didn't give me any information on what its ability was either, but it didn't just stop qi, it also stopped me from producing my shadow as well.'

While having the sword temporarily in his position, Quinn had attempted to use his shadow powers on the weapon as well, but it had failed. It couldn't even be stored in his dimensional space, it was as if the sword had the ability to negate everything, including Qi, abilities and perhaps even more.

Quinn slightly regretted having handed the blade back to its owner. Longblade had already given him a valuable gift, so it would have been strange to keep it. Still, once he was in a better state of mind, perhaps he would allow Quinn to borrow it, if he couldn't provide him with more information on it, at last.

'Damn, I'm going to be asking him for far too many favours at this rate if I ask for the sword as well. Maybe we can swap?' Quinn thought.



The last thing that Quinn had forgotten about was the quest reward, something he had received for defeating agent 2. He had received the usual level up, with a stat point but there was one addition to the skill that he didn't expect.

[Your ability to store Qi has increased]

[The amount of Qi in your body has permanently increased]

It was strange but he could tell that the system had granted the request almost immediately. For the extra energy his body had felt from absorbing the crystals now felt a part of him. However, there still seemed to be an imbalance. It felt more like the extra energy for the crystals would have disappeared if it was not for the quest reward.

In the middle of his thoughts, another soldier came to check up on them, doing his best to not disturb anyone's sleep, which was surprisingly considerate. They waited for the guard to come in and do his usual head check count, and when it was over, it was time for them to leave.

Raten in his beast body, Sil and lastly Shiro would accompany Quinn during his meeting with Logan.

Using shadow travel, everyone was able to hop in, and they could travel under the walls and head to their destination. The good thing was, with it being night time, it was next to impossible for anyone to spot the Shadow travel that would move across the ground.

They traveled at a fast pace through the Shelter walls, and when they were a distance away where they couldn't be seen by the others, Quinn connected with Logan to check where he was. The other was located behind a mud hill in the west direction.

Since they couldn't fall through the sinkholes it was easy enough to reach. Quinn imagined that Logan was able to cope with the tricky terrain as long as the beast with him was helping. Eventually Quinn spotted the mud like hill, it was far smaller than the one the shelter was placed on, but it was enough to give them cover, and when going around the hill, they could see Logan standing underneath its shade, with a dark coloured beast.

Popping out of the shadow, all of them came out at once, with Quinn at the front in case the humanoid beast would suddenly attack. Sil was also staying close to Shiro. After what he had learned, there was always the chance that Raten could be taken control of and they would be suffering from a pincer-like attack.

“Um it’s nice for everyone to meet, I guess?” Quinn awkwardly said, staring at the other humanoid beast.

“Are these the comrades that you spoke of?” The King tier beast asked Logan as he sniffed. “They seem to be human... for the most part.”

It was clear that there was a lot of explaining ahead of them, but Quinn was glad that the beast hadn’t outright been hostile at their appearance. Before any of them could speak up, the Demi-god tier beast stepped forward. Just from the way it walked, Quinn could tell that the one in charge was no longer Raten.

The humanoid beast then leant forward to the side of the king tiers ear, and the two of them stood aside, conversing in hushed tones, to prevent the ‘humans’ to listen in.

However, they were unaware just how good Quinn’s hearing was. He noted with interest that the two of them were actually conversing in the human language. When thinking about it, it made sense since the way normal beasts communicated shouldn’t be too suited to explain more complicated things and it wasn’t exactly a language, they were too primitive for that.

Since they both had learnt this language they could talk to each other more freely. As for what they were talking about, it was the special deal that Shiro had made with the Demi-god tier beast. It seemed like Shiro had also already explained that they had another friend that they wished to save and needed the body of another humanoid beast.

After hearing everything from someone it trusted, the King tier beast looked over at Quinn.

“I understand that you are the leader of all these people here?” It addressed Quinn, who merely nodded. “If you can really fulfill that promise, then I shall agree to host someone else in my body for as long as you need to. The lives of too many have already been sacrificed in hopes of us stopping the humans.”

“It is clear to me that even if we grow strong enough to fend off the ones already here, more of your kind will just come in. They will just send more and stronger reinforcements to capture or kill us. If you have the power to break the cycle then I ask you to do so. In return for helping us you will have our bodies.”

“If I do not, then you are free to have your bodies back.” Quinn answered immediately.

With the agreement between them all having been made. It was time to get to work. Shiro stood there placing his hand on Sil’s and the King tier beasts head. It was silent for a while. Until one person started to complain about who had come back.

“Wait a second. Did that beast just agree on the spot, so they don’t have to have a massive fight, risking their life in that dreaded place?! What sort of bullshit is this!” Raten complained.

In the middle of his complaints, Shiro was doing his part, and looking at the beast’s eyes, they were no longer as fierce as before, instead they started to water up slowly.

“It’s been a long time since I last saw you.”

“Welcome back, Vorden. It’s good to see you again.”

My Vampire System Chapter 1178: Consuming beast crystals

The bond between Vorden and Quinn couldn’t be described by mere words. The second they saw each other, memories started to flood both of their minds of the days they spent with each other. Vorden, one of Quinn’s first friends. Who had always been by his side. Even when finding out he was a V, when he was betrayed by another close friend of his, Vorden was always there.

It felt strange when he was gone, especially since he was unable to say any last words. Which was why Quinn was adamant that they would bring him back one day. There were very few people that Quinn had this close of a bond with.

Soon another approached Vorden, one who had missed him dearly. It was none other than Sil. Who grabbed Vorden's hand and fell to his knees.

"Vorden!" Sil let out almost a shrieking sound as the tears came out running down his face. It wasn't too long ago that he had been crying over another.

'Is it just me, or is he crying more over Vorden than me?' Raten thought. 'Not that I care anyway.'

There was one person who felt a little left out, and that was Shiro. Sure he was happy that Sil and Quinn had gotten their long lost friends back, but he couldn't feel the same happiness as they did.

"Thank you," Quinn said to Shiro while Sil and Vorden had their own little catch up. "Without you, none of this would have been possible. Remember that you brought us all back together. You have helped out the Cursed faction so much in the little time you have been here."

Shiro wanted to hide his expression from Quinn, looking at the ground, his face full of smiles. He had finally returned the favour back to both of them, for saving him from the cruel life he had experienced at school.

Once all of the initial emotions were out of the way, the group sat down as there was quite a bit of catching up. Even Shio was interested, and since Shiro had already helped them out so much, Quinn wasn't shy about revealing specific details to him about the vampire world out there.

Despite at any time being able to refuse to help or run away from the situation, Shiro had helped every single time. There was a bond of trust that had been built up between them all. It was interesting to Shiro to know that Quinn was a leader of not just the human world but also the vampire world.

It was expected with how powerful a person he was, but learning that there was a whole planet filled with a different hierarchy system and society was quite amazing. Some things simply went over his head, but he was trying his best to follow.

When Quinn started to talk about Blade Island, Hilston and all the others, both Raten and Vorden were listening intently. They even clenched fists in anger when learning of the part where Hilston had attacked them all.

Finally, when the tales of everything that had happened were over, the two boys looked over at Sil.

“You actually did that much, you little runt!” Raten said.

“I think what Raten is trying to say is, it seems like you have grown, and you did a lot to help others even without us,” Vorden replied.

It was strange for both of them. They had talked to Sil so much inside of his mind, and for them to be able to communicate with each other in the open like so, was just strange.

“What is the plan for now?” Logan asked, noting that they had already used up almost an hour of the time they had left.

Vorden started to attempt to use his body to some type of degree as he wasn’t quite used to it, but one thing was clear, that he and Raten no longer had the ability to copy other abilities. Even the beast powers were a little strange for them to use.

“Will you be able to eventually learn?” Quinn asked.

“My beast says that he will be happy to guide me on how to use the body,” Vorden said. “The beast seems like a cool guy, my style.”

Raten didn’t say anything, but they had seen he had adapted quite well to his beast, already knowing how to use its body, perhaps even better than the beast could.

The next thing they wondered was whether Sil could still use and store up to six abilities. It had been a while since he had touched ability users, so most of his abilities had now disappeared.

“I think it should be okay. When Raten left my mind, my powers seemed to all be there, so I can still move the dragon if need be.” Sil mentioned knowing that was one of the requests that had been made. It was a thought that Quinn had put off for a while now. Still, he did eventually want to go back to the island, for more reasons than one, even to look at how his little demon tier seedling was doing.

“For now, I think it’s safer if the two of you stay outside and just stay out of trouble. Resolving the issue is one thing, but they might ask for a few of their own requests. So if we just say the King tier beast has escaped and there is nothing we can do about it, it would be better for us. There is one thing I want to check though.” Quinn said, as he first looked towards Raten.

[Inspect]

[Demi-god tier Humanoid beast]

[Evolution possible]

[Current Evolution at 9 percent]

‘Judging from the beast I saw in the lab, it means that Raten is currently 9 percent of the way there. Into evolving into a demon tier beast. I wonder how many crystals he would need to get to the next stage.’ Quinn thought.

[Inspect]

[King tier humanoid beast]

[Evolution possible]

[Current Evolution at 76 percent]

‘76 percent. Vorden’s tier level is a few steps below even Raten’s tier, so perhaps it doesn’t need as many crystals?’

“Vorden, would you be up for trying something?” Quinn suggested. Opening up his system, soon crystals started to fall from his hand on the ground, a large many crystals, all different tier levels.

“My crystals!” Raten shouted out, but they soon realised that it was the beast talking and not Raten.

“I’m sorry, but while travelling through the tunnels, I got lost and came across them. I couldn’t just leave them there. Anyway, I was wondering Vorden, if you consumed these crystals, I think we could evolve your breasts body to the next stage.” Quinn suggested.

The beast that had now taken control over Ratan’s body looked at Quinn for a second. He soon realised that many of the crystals had gone missing and was wondering just what was going on.

“I know you wanted to evolve yourself.” Quinn glanced at the Demi-god tier beast. “But these crystals wouldn’t be even close enough to evolving yourself, while your friend’s body is at a closer stage. Helping him level up will be beneficial to us both.”

Vorden then picked up the crystals and looked at them, wondering just what he would do with them to help him level up.

“According to the information I obtained from the lab, there are several ways beast can evolve using the energy of the crystal, but for you, the easiest way, for where we are right now, is just to eat them,” Logan explained.

“Eat them?” Vorden wondered, looking at the crystals. He soon found himself opening his mouth and chomping down on the crystals. His jaw was many times stronger than that of a human, and the crystal had broken in half. It wasn’t as bad as Vorden expected, and soon the whole crystal had been consumed.

After consuming the crystal, a warm feeling was felt in his belly, and energy was rising in him, but soon after the rise in energy, he felt quite weak.

“After consuming the crystals, the beasts seem to go into a type of hibernation as their body changes slightly,” Logan explained. Even without the system, he was able to gather information similar to what Quinn had.

After eating a few more crystals, Quinn could see it with his system. Vorden was getting closer to his Evolution until eventually, the Evolution started to begin.

Vorden was transforming from a king tier humanoid beast into a legendary humanoid beast.

‘If these two can keep evolving up until the demon tier level, the two of them will be the strongest in the Cursed faction.’ Quinn thought.

My Vampire System Chapter 1179: The special deal

Vorden in his beast form was wriggling from pain. He was unable to stand on his own two feet and fell to the ground as he let out a silent roar. When using his Inspect skill, Quinn could see that the

[Evolution possible] had turned into an [Evolving] .

The scene reminded Quinn of himself whenever he himself would go through different evolutions as a Vampire and how each one would be more painful than the last. Poor Vorden had just been given a body and suddenly he was being tortured.

“Holy shit, this hurts so much. Come on, Tails, this is your body, how about we swap for a moment?” Vorden pleaded amidst his grunting and m\*aning. The one he was speaking to was naturally the humanoid beast. The answer to that was fairly obvious, so Vorden continued to endure the pain.

“The process takes a while for them to evolve.” Logan explained. “I imagine you guys need to get back soon before they find out.”

This was the large difference between the two evolutions, time,, and Quinn honestly didn’t know how long Vorden would have to suffer. It felt a little strange that they would be parting so soon and had to



leave him in his condition, but they knew that once this was all over they could more or less return to the status quo.

After getting back, Quinn asked the others if a guard had showed up yet, but thankfully it seemed like everything had worked out for once. There were no extra troubles, no unexpected news, nothing. So to celebrate this, Quinn decided to tell the others that transferring Vorden over had been a complete success.

There were smiles and cheers around the room, Quinn even wanted to tell Peter because he knew he would be over the moon as well, but something was on Layla's mind about the whole thing.

"Quinn, I know it's beneficial for them to be strong humanoid beasts at the moment, but do you plan to keep them in them forever? What about after the war with the Dalki?" Layla had to ask.

Of course, this was something Quinn had thought about, yet it would be mostly up to Vorden and Raten how they wanted to deal with it.

"I've thought about putting them in the body of some criminals. Like people who would be sentenced to death. However, I don't really want a person's death to be on their hands. I also know that these beasts have intelligence, far beyond what we had imagined, so it must be tough on them to live as Vorden and Raten did before."

"I'm hoping that Eno or Logan can come up with a perfect clone when everything is over, a body without a prior consciousness. Technology keeps on advancing so some day, right."

In the end, this was a long term permanent solution. There was no need to worry about a clone's body dying on them, but if they wanted to return to being human, it would be another task, just like Quinn had the task of figuring out how to turn all of Paul's men and the others back as well.

— —

The next morning, the one who entered the safe house turned out to be Rafer. Judging by the huge smile on his face, he came with some good news.

“Colonel Longblade has successfully made a full recovery, and has therefore called for a meeting ASAP, to discuss the matters and rewards for the Cursed faction in helping us complete the assigned task. He would like to meet the highest ranked representative of the Cursed faction, and has requested for the humanoid Demi-god tier beast to present as the matters pertain to it.”

“I’m sorry, but I have to ask anyone else who will not be vitally important for the meeting to stay here for a bit longer.” Rafer bowed his head in front of them.

On paper the one in charge of the Cursed faction group would be Nathan, but the way it was worded, made it clear that Longblade wanted to meet Quinn. The Cursed faction leader had already taken off his mask in the tunnels and some of the soldiers had recognised him yesterday.

The fact that Quinn had come undercover would surely only worsen the public opinion of the Cursed group, but he didn’t care for that now.

“Lead the way.” Quinn requested.

Aside from Raten in his Demi-god tier beast body, Quinn had instructed Shiro to come along. The young boy was necessary since he was supposedly the one that was ‘controlling’ the beast, which in a way wasn’t a complete lie. He didn’t take anyone else though, since he didn’t want to make it seem as if he didn’t trust the Earthborn group.

Sil, Layla, Fex and Nathan naturally weren’t too happy about being left behind, but they understood the necessity and opted to wait for Quinn to return and tell them all about this meeting afterward.

Eventually, they reached the main military base, where Quinn’s entourage was escorted to the main room. Something the Vampire Lord noticed was that people acted cautious around him, stopping their conversation as soon as he came into sight.

‘Are they catching on to the difference between vampires and humans? The report did say we have enhanced senses.’ Quinn wondered. ‘Not that it stopped them from taunting us when we had just arrived.’

Longblade had put on a smile as soon as they entered the meeting room with a large circular table inside. Other than him Avion, Jay, Till were already seated. As the last Sergeant under the Colonel Rafer took a place next to his superior.

There was only one more open seat, leaving Shiro and Raten standing. Four people also had quickly surrounding the Demi-god tier beast . Raten, as well as the beast inside him, would have very much enjoyed snapping at them, but for once he knew what the best course of action was.

“When you told me that the Cursed faction’s goal was to capture the beast, I never thought that you intended to tame it. No wonder, you yourself came down here to lead this mission. Now, allow me to start off this meeting by thanking you and your group for everything you did.” Colonel Longblade stood up and bowed his head in front of the Cursed faction leader.

“I have already prepared the rewards for you and your group.” On the table he placed the black sword that Quinn had seen. “I have thought long and hard how I could repay you for saving not only my life but that of my subordinates as well. This is for the Cursed faction in general. No, let me correct myself. The sword I gave you before was for beating me in the duel. This sword is my gift for the beauty of a girl by your side.”

“By the time I arrived at the hospital I had already lost a ton of blood. I’m certain if it wasn’t for her healing ability, I wouldn’t be here right now. Although it pains me, she has earned the right to wield this sword. If she wishes to pass it on to the Cursed faction then so be it.”

“Of course I haven’t forgotten about your companion who used the strings to stop the bleeding. He appears to be quite the Mech enthusiast, so I have prepared a special Mech for him. It is the old one Sergeant Avion used in the past. He has agreed to this as well, so I refuse to take a no from you as an answer.”

So far the meeting was going excellent for Quinn. The black sword was something Quinn had been unsure how to request, since he didn’t really know what he could offer the Colonel in exchange.

“With that out of the way, I’m afraid that there are some pressing matters that still need to be dealt with. Sergeant Till was in charge of guarding the facility during my absence, and he claims that a member of your Cursed faction has broken into one of our research facilities, allowing another humanoid beast which we had been taking care of to escape.”

“Given the state of things, can you please confirm whether that person is someone from your faction? Is there any possibility he’s one of the enemy V?” Longblade asked, surprisingly offering Quinn a way out.

“No, the one your men have seen is Logan Green. Please allow me to explain the reason for his actions” Quinn requested, the military leader nodded granting the request. “As you can see for yourself we have already managed to ‘subdue’ one humanoid beast. However, Shiro’s ability isn’t exactly ‘taming’ a beast in the traditional sense. Instead he is able to speak with them on a level that goes beyond language.”

“I’m aware that most of the Earthborn group still don’t trust us, despite you vouching for us. You must be aware how great a skill this boy has and how others would wish to utilise it, so I hope this matter can stay between us. During our fight, we had captured an agent of Pure, who had revealed information to us about the lab. Logan was simply trying to break out one of the beasts so we could ask it a few questions. We never intended to harm anybody, something that should be obvious by the fact that not a single one of your men has suffered any life threatening injuries or death.” Quinn pointed out.

This was true, although some had been injured quite severely to the point they were unable to move, all of them would be able to recover in due time. This was something that Longblade found strange about the other Demi-god tier beast as well, that it never once killed any of those it attacked in the mine.

“Then what about reports of the infiltrator being a Dalki?” Till asked.

“A transformation ability. Please ask your men whether they saw a Dalki or a human with a Dalki part? When have we ever seen a Dalki with the ability to get rid of their scale-like features or to make themselves look human? Never mind one as small as Logan. If you don’t believe me then I also happen to have video footage recorded by him personally. That will answer the question.”

Till decided to back down as this was something that he needed to check before he made more accusations, but perhaps his people had just been too afraid and shocked to differentiate the truth of the matter.

“You say that Shiro is able to speak with the beasts? Then I have a few questions of my own for it. The one on top of my mind is why has it never attacked us directly? Also, Quinn, despite my goodwill towards you, I have trouble believing that as long as something as powerful as a humanoid Demi-god tier beast isn’t tamed, that it would willingly agree to side with you. Am I correct in assuming that there is something it wants for its cooperation?” Longblade asked quick on the uptake.

Quinn glanced at Shiro for a second, suggesting that it was best that he himself explained this situation. He cleared his throat before speaking.

“The Demi-god tier beast can be considered the leader and representative for the many beasts on this planet. Its request was for the Colonel and his people to cease all mining operations effective immediately, as well as for this planet to remain human free!” Shiro spoke out loud as if reading out an announcement.

The Sergeants looked at each other, before turning to Longblade who seemed just as troubled. This was a request that they were unlikely to comply with.

My Vampire System Chapter 1180: You are not in charge of us!

The reaction on the table was as expected. The Sergeants and Longblade had seemingly forgotten about Quinn being in the room with them and had started to discuss how to tackle this request. Sergeant Till had naturally instantly wanted to refuse it, while the others had insisted to think this through, it was apparent that they were not too enthusiastic about just leaving.

Quinn wasn't too surprised given their reaction. He too had initially been shocked when Shiro had told him about the promise as well as the memories he had experienced inside the Demi-god tier beast's head. It was commendable, how much the beast cared for its home planet to the point it was willing to give away its body.

In some ways, it was similar to humanity's attachment to Earth. Despite being able to live on Shelters on relatively safe planets, none would decline if given the chance to live on that one planet.

As long as they were able to fulfill the wishes of the humanoid beasts, Quinn didn't doubt they would keep their promise. Back in the lab, the scientist had pleaded the beast to forgive them, before freeing it. After regaining its freedom, it could have easily taken revenge against those humans who had taken it prisoner and tortured it.

And yet, it had repaid her kindness by not killing any humans, trying to make them leave in a non-lethal way.

'In some ways, those beasts are more honourable than humans.' Quinn thought.

"I'm sorry, Quinn, but that is not something I can do for you." Longblade stated after the military leaders had come to a conclusion in their discussion. "This planet is one of the major mining points that supplies the entirety of the Earthborn group with beast crystals. Especially in the current times, we can't just give up such a strategic point."

Planet Humding seemed to have more natural beast crystals inside it compared to any other, and on top of that they also had the facility that was used to experiment on the beasts as well. Quinn had already been prepared that things wouldn't be that easy, yet he still remained calm.

The Demi-god tier beast was now looking his way, its eyes formed to slits. It was clear Raten wasn't in control, and he wanted answers. The soldiers surrounding the humanoid tier beast became nervous and were ready to act if it became violent.

"Colonel Longblade, do you know what would happen to this planet if you continue mining those crystals?" Quinn questioned. "Ever since beasts were discovered, scientists have wondered how they are created. They lack reproductive organs like other mammals have them. According to my friend here, I now know the answer."

"The beasts originally stem from the beast crystals that are produced by the planet, the ones we mine. You take all of the beast crystals, then will it also mean you are taking the beast's lives. With all the crystals gone, there will be no more beasts and the planet will die." Quinn shared what he had learned.

According to the humanoid beast, each planet had a special type of crystal he called a 'nest' that would produce those beasts, letting them grow. That nest could survive in any type of environment.

Surprisingly, the military never seemed to have found those nests, which made Quinn wonder if they were hard to come by, or that might be information only someone like Oscar would have known.

"That's touching and all, but in case you've forgotten, we still have a war to fight!" Till challenged Quinn's point. "You wear beast gear yourself, don't you? Doesn't the Cursed faction kill beasts as well, to create stronger tools? What's the difference between killing beasts and destroying the planet they live on?"

“Well, he isn’t exactly human.” Joy mumbled, a little afraid to say it out loud. He agreed with Till to some degree. Although he understood there was a huge difference between killing beasts and destroying a planet, they needed the resources if they were to stand a chance against the Dalki. If it meant ruining a planet, well that was a small price to pay for the future of humanity.

“I’m not here to argue about whether your group in particular or any of the other groups mining for crystals in general are right or wrong.” Quinn stated. “This was the agreement that we made with the humanoid Demi-god tier beast in order for him to work with us. And I do intend to keep this promise.”

Till chuckled at this fact. “Making promises to beasts without caring about humanity as a whole. What else should one expect from someone who is a V. In case you’ve forgotten, this planet isn’t under your jurisdiction!”

Although Longblade didn’t like the way his Sergeant was talking to his savior, he wasn’t wrong.

“I apologise for the rudeness of Sergeant Till, but he has a point. You might be one of the World Leaders, but each one of you is only responsible for your own planets. Only someone with higher authority than Head General Innu or himself could order us to leave.”

Quinn just smiled politely, still calm. “Well, why don’t we ask someone like that then?”

The Cursed faction leader placed a strange circular device in the middle of the table. Logan had handed it over before they left him at night. It had a large green surface on the top, with a few touch buttons around the edge.

When placed on the table, Quinn pressed a couple of buttons, and it started to glow for a while, until it eventually displayed a holographic figure. Recognising the person, the military men immediately stood up.

“Head General Sach, I hope you are doing well.” Longblade saluted his superior.

“At ease.” Sach replied.

When seeing who had called him, Sach made sure that he would answer it, but he didn't expect to be called in the current situation they were in at the moment.

"What do you need help with, Quinn? I can't imagine you called me here in front of others for no reason?" Sach asked.

Nobody missed that the Head General seemed to be on a first name basis with the other. However, even more surprising was the fact that Quinn somehow had the personal number of the Head General. Just what was their relationship?

'Quinn, is this why you didn't seem to be worried?' Longblade wondered. 'Although Head General Sach does rank above us, we were technically under Head General Innu before. Even if he orders it, we can't comply until a new leader for our group has been selected.'

Usually, there would be a vote and a meeting for others to come and select a new Head General. Or a recommendation from a rank higher, the supreme commander. The Supreme Commander could also appoint someone on their own to be in charge but nothing had been heard from Oscar either.

"I am currently on Humding and I wish for all operations on this planet to stop. If possible, it would be great if it could be handed over to the Cursed faction. In exchange I'm willing to offer you one of the Cursed faction planets in return. I know they're not in the same vicinity but this is important to me." Quinn requested. "Helen should be able to select one, with a similar crystal output."

It didn't take long for Sach to give an answer like the others had suspected.

"I will comply with your request Quinn. I think it's a fair deal and I believe the leader of the Cursed faction must have his reasons for doing so." Sach nodded.

"Head General Sach, excuse my interruption, but I don't believe you have the authority to agree to such a thing!" Longblade had to step in. He didn't want a dispute to arise just because of this, but they were all military men. They had to follow the proper procedure and it had to be given by someone who was allowed to do that.



"I guess since the announcement will go out in a few hours anyway, I might as well be the one to tell you all. There was a majority vote from the fifty seats. I, Sach, have been voted in as the new Supreme Commander. So, yes, Colonel, I believe I DO have the authority." Sach stated with a large smile.

The others were wondering if they might have misheard or possibly they were dreaming. They didn't understand why there was even a vote in the first place for a new Supreme Commander.

"What is going on? Is this really Head General Sach?" Till asked.

Sach just gave out a sigh, prepared that they might not believe him.

"If you wish to wait, you should soon get a confirmation. Quinn, there will also be a few other announcements. One of them will be about what Head General Innu had attempted to do to you."

My Vampire System Chapter 1181: A Changing world

There were a series of events that had led up to Sach becoming the next Supreme Commander. One of them on the Bertha ship with Oscar's remains. The parts of his body floated about in the container, and standing outside was none other than Samantha.

"Is it true father, that there really is no chance of bringing you back?" Samantha asked, seemingly hoping for an answer. The girl was aware of the futility of this action, as this wasn't the first time she had done so, after recovering.

Although recovered seemed too generous of a term. The Head General was awake, and was eating without anyone else forcing her to, but the bags under her eyes were heavy and dark, telling tales of her struggles to get some rest.

Jane, Oscar's top assistant, had informed Sach as soon as Samantha had woken up again, who in turn had explained everything that had happened during the Cursed faction's visit.

“Why was it that you wanted to speak with Quinn in your final moments? Why not me, your own daughter? How can you just leave everything in the hands of us? Us who can’t even come together when the sake of the whole world depends on it.” Walking up to the glass she banged on the container.

It was a weak hit, one with hardly any power. It was the only thing she could do to relieve some of her frustration, unable to understand what her father had been thinking. What’s worse, it was up to her to pull the plug. How could a parent ask that of their own child, yet at the same time, it felt like she was the only one who should be the one to do it.

Alas, the one thing Oscar didn’t account for, was that Samantha still hadn’t given up on him...

“Doctor, are you certain that you can bring him back? Even if he might not be fully himself, you have a way to help him?” Samantha asked to reassure herself as she turned around. “Could you explain further?”

The older looking gentleman had remained at the back of the room, allowing Samantha a semblance of privacy. Despite being called a doctor, he wasn’t wearing a lab uniform like others who had entered before him.

“Indeed, I can do things that others can’t, but it will take me some time. If you trust in me, then I will take him away. My only condition is that the world must know that Oscar, as he is currently, is no longer. As for your other question, you already know there are things out there that are no longer human. It would be... similar to that.” The man replied.

Samantha was biting her lower lip, still struggling with herself between following her father’s wishes and her own selfish desire as his daughter.

---

The alarms inside the facility went off once more, and soldiers, guards and doctors came running in, entering the room. When they entered they could see several pieces of broken glass on the floor amidst some liquid. Not only that, parts of Oscar’s body were also lying out on the floor, yet there was one part that was obviously missing, the head.

“What happened, General Samantha, was there an intruder?” Sergeant Fay asked, as her ability had allowed her to be the first one on site.

“No, there was no intruder.” Samantha replied lifelessly. “It was my father’s wish to no longer be kept alive, so I complied with his request. Since I wanted to do it with my own hands, I apologise for not asking someone to turn off the alarm.”.

Fay who had been looking over the girl during her recovery time thought this was for the best. Leaving Oscar alive would only give her false hope. She could only truly forget about it, once he was allowed to pass on.

“Where the head!” the doctors cired.

“I got rid of it.” Smantha answered.

Although, those around Samantha told her that it’s best to rest and get over and take time to get over her grief, perhaps prepare a funeral for her father. She had argued that it was best for her to move on. When working she had plenty of time to forget everything that was to happen, and wanted to know what the next set of affairs were.

After reading everything, she sat in her office.

‘So the board has decided to cast a vote on who the next Supreme Commander should be, and they have considered me as one of the candidates. Well that is to be expected, they must think my father raised me to fit this role.’

The board consisted of those in the military who had a legacy position. They were a group of ten men, whose family lines had been there since the very beginning, long before the creation of the new style of military. In the old world before the Dalki attack, these were people who had great power and influence.

However, as things had started to change and the world started to care about power, positions changed, but these men who had originally sponsored the current state of power had been granted a legacy position and were placed in charge of making certain decisions. In total there were ten, but even then they were unable to make decisions on their own.

All those who belonged to the military, a total of fifty of them would be given seats. These seats acted as votes for big decisions such as this one. As for the seats themselves, they worked similar to a local election, voted by those in the military.

Unfortunately, even this system wasn't without corruption. It was an open secret that those in high positions would often use the higher level ability books or other incentives as a way to obtain votes and rise up in the ranks. Those naturally stronger would also obtain a lot of votes, which was how Oscar who had been hailed as one of the Heroes of War eventually got to his position as well.

Soon, Samantha had made a call.

"Hello there, this is Head General Samantha White speaking. I would just like to inform you that I would like you to remove me from the list of potential successors to my late father's position... Who do I think would be best suited for the role?"

Even if Samantha didn't want to be Supreme Commander herself, she still had a vote as well. She knew she would have a lot of supporters, and the votes themselves were made public. So others knew who voted for them.

The followers of Samantha would also choose to follow who she believed would be fit to be the next leader.

'Head General Sach was the one who rushed in when we were on the joint mission together. He didn't exactly listen to my advice and was too confident in his abilities, but he remained there, and tried his best to help. Someone like him, should be the one to lead the Earthborn group.'

"Yes, I have a nomination...." Samantha said.

---

Not long after, the votes were counted, with each person giving their reason why they were most suitable for being the supreme commander, but they understood that it was mostly for show. At this point, no words would sway the others, everyone already cast their votes.

As most had expected, the one with the most votes turned out to be Head General Sach. To most the Head Generals had always been the three most likely candidates. With Innu having disappeared and Samantha giving up her position, there really wasn't anyone else to compete with him.

There were the other Generals, some even former Head Generals under the old system, but the votes for them were split making it a no contest for who would get on top, yet while all of this was happening, ironically none of them were aware that Head General Sach was currently learning the ways of a V at the Cursed faction ship.

This was when he had received the call from Quinn, just as he had said as well. Now that a new Supreme Commander had been elected, the humans, and world would learn of the news to come.

The emergency broadcast system was used once more, only the one on screen was none of the World Leaders. What came as a surprise to all, was that Bonny, the world famous reporter, stood there, pieces of paper in hand, as if she was a news anchor.

"Greetings everyone, it's my honor today, to share with you some urgent information that the world deserves to know. This breaking news has to do with the Earthborn faction, the Cursed faction and the V you all know of. Firstly, I would like to report that as of today Supreme Commander Oscar has retired from his role, and his successor has already been selected..."

My Vampire System Chapter 1182: World Changing Day

The world broadcast had ended, and it had two main messages it had delivered to everyone far and wide. The first was the fact that Oscar, who had been the supreme commander since the first Dalki war, had retired, giving up his position.

Of course, there were only a few people who actually knew the truth. It made Quinn wonder why they chose to lie about such a thing. Perhaps they were afraid that it would demoralise the human race knowing about Oscar's death. No, what was worse and what they didn't want to get out to the public was that Oscar lost.

To the public, he was the figure that was the strongest figure in the world, not Hilston, not Quinn or Owen, but Oscar. He was their hope, so it was information they had to avoid at all costs. With that announcement made, it was then time for Sach to introduce himself as well.

After taking up the role, there was a short speech from Sach. It was one that tried to be inspirational. It was set up, so the human race didn't have to worry, that everything was going to stay the same. There was no reason for the change apart from Oscar's retirement.

However, those that worked higher up knew there was something up. Even if they hadn't been told of Oscar's death, they knew there was still Samantha and wondered what had happened to her for her to give up her own nomination and vote.

The world broadcast ended there, and then a separate broadcast went out to all of those in the military that were part of the Earthborn group. This message was about Head general Innu's death. Something impossible to hide, considering it had already spread amongst certain people.

The good news was, Bonny had done her best to show Quinn in a good light. There was footage from when they were first attacked and showed that Bonny and Void were both on the ship at the time. The scene at the very end showed that Innu was a V, someone addicted to blood. Despite the video being shown everywhere, a couple of people were suspicious about what Innu really was.

Sach, who now already somewhat knew the truth, Samantha, and several people close to Oscar who were now under Samantha had suspicions about the video. Oscar, and Innu were in the room when they had set up their unique trap. The pouring of the blood, at the time, Innu showed no such reaction. Which was why it was a little strange for them to see him show a reaction there and then to the small amount of blood.

Still, this news hadn't gone out for some reason, and instead, the talk of the military focused on these two points

"Sach was chosen. What about Samantha? She was Oscar's daughter after all?"

"I heard from one of the seats that Samantha wasn't an option. It appears that she decided to reject the nomination."

“Still, Sach should do a good job, I worked under him before, and he is skilled even without his ability.”

“But that came as a surprise, didn’t it?”

“What, about Oscar suddenly retiring? I mean, he was a bit old, past his prime back in the day, but his abilities are still strong. Maybe he won’t be supreme commander anymore, but we could still see him on the front line.”

“Are you crazy, he deserves his rest. He had already done so much in the first war, but I wasn’t talking about that. I was talking about Head general Innu, about how he was a V.”

“....”

“If a head general could be a V, doesn’t that mean anyone could be a V working with the Dalki? That’s a scary thought to have. No wonder they decided to not broadcast it outside. I actually thought the Cursed faction had attacked him for another reason, but it was clear in that video. They were ambushed and lucky to get out of their alive.”

“How strong do you think the cursed leader is? Did you see that strange power he was using? No one could even get close to him.”

The discussions didn’t stop there, but the Earthborn group couldn’t stay quiet. It was a world changing day, after all.

—

Back on Mudding things were moving smoothly. After learning that the role of supreme commander now belonged to Sach, things moved smoothly after that. An official order came through, and Longblade got to work immediately.

Longblade and his team were still in the middle of leaving the planet as it was. It would take a while as large transport ships were coming and leaving from the island. Which also meant that it was time for Quinn and the others to take their leave as well.

They had achieved everything that needed to be accomplished, and now the Cursed faction was to go onboard the ship they had arrived in. Seeing them off personally was Cornel Longbalde, Sergeant Rafer and Sergeant Avion.

“It took a lot of work to put that mech in that ship, so I hope that your group will treat it with care,” Avion said. “Fex, you’re polite. Far better than I was when I first started to use that thing, I think maybe we had a rematch, we wouldn’t know who the winner would be.”

“Thanks,” Fex said, smiling back. “I’ll keep practising. I have some strong opponents on the Cursed ship who I think I could test this thing on. Hey, I could even try fighting the beast again if I really wanted.” Pointing his thumb behind him.

It wasn’t too much of an odd sight to see, a beast with humans since they also saw those with the Bree family ability do the same. What felt strange was the beast that Avion was fighting with his life on the line, was standing just behind them.

“Quinn, I want to apologise for the other sergeant’s behaviour, but I also don’t want you to blame them. Times are tough for the whole human race.” Rafer said. “I think now with news having come out. Your situation should become a bit better. At least good enough, so you no longer have to hide your identity. Still, there will be those out there that treat you different. Even if you weren’t a V.”

Something Quinn knew well. It felt like he had been treated as an outcast his whole life, not just when he had become a V.

“I guess it’s finally my turn to say my goodbyes. First, I’m glad to see that my prized sword has ended up in Layla’s hands. Although your skills aren’t the best, I did see you have heart when fighting against the Pure agent. I also know that you have a teacher far better than I on the cursed ship.” Longblade said with a smile.

“Can I ask, where did you get the sword?” Quinn wondered.

“Unfortunately, that tale is not as heroic as I would like. I assume you are wondering what great beast I defeated to obtain it, but that wasn’t quite the case at all. I saw a few weaker beasts carrying it around in their mouths and just happened to come across it, but if anyone asks, be sure to tell them I defeated a



mighty dragon of some sort.” Long Blade chuckled. “I’m sure this won’t be the last time each of us will meet. The Dalki haven’t acted fully yet, but there may be a time when we are all fighting side by side. I wish you and your group a safe trip.”

Saying their goodbyes, they took off on the ship and exited out of the shelter. They had also picked up Logan and Vorden who would be in hiding a short ride away. Truthfully, Vorden couldn’t wait to get back and see the others as well.

— —

When the world broadcast was sent out, the humans weren’t the only ones who had gotten their hands on information that a new supreme leader had been selected.

At the moment, inside the dark cave-like room. Graham was sitting down at a table.

“So the humans have decided to replace their leader after what happened to him. Slicer also has been quieter than I thought it would be. I guess that means just one thing.” Graham said, standing up.

“It is time that I finally make my move. It is time for the full war.”

My Vampire System Chapter 1183: The Family returns

Apart from Quinn, Shiro and Sil, the others had yet to see the new humanoid beast that now housed Vorden’s consciousness. Once he had boarded the ship, the Cursed group was finding it hard to keep their eyes off him.

His beast form looked similar to what Quinn had seen the previous day. He was still mostly covered in black fur with a seemingly gigantic tail on his back, but his evolution gave his appearance a few slight changes.

As a King-tier beast his tails had been bunched up together and similar to a flower it had made it hard to tell if it was one piece or not, but now that the tails had grown longer they started to resemble a

scorpion's stinger. They curved up as they were inches off the ground and hovered around the shoulder area before curving back down again.

On top of that, there were now what looked like hard pieces similar to a fin sticking out from the beast's forearms, yet there was soft fur on top of them.

'It looks like with each evolution his form will continue to change and grow. I guess it will be harder to tell with Raten since the Demi-god tier beats' ability covers what his real body looks like.' Quinn thought.

"You look damn cool!" Fex exclaimed excitedly, sticking his hand out, trying to stroke Vorden's body. "A lot better than Muddy over there. Tails is a lot cooler."

"Muddy? Tails?" Layla repeated, slightly confused.

"Nicknames for the beasts. Their minds are still in the bodies as well, so I thought it might be a good way for us to differentiate between when the Blade boys are in control and when the beasts are." Fex explained

Now that was a good point to make. It would be hard to keep track if they were to constantly call them, the Demi-god tier beast and the Emperor tier beast. The only problem was whether or not the beasts were okay with these nicknames, but at least they hadn't protested so far.

[Inspect]

[Emperor tier humanoid beast]

[Evolution possible]

[Next evolution 0 percent]

As expected, after evolving they would need to consume more crystals to continue to get stronger. Unfortunately, a lot of crystals from Muddy's stash had been used by Quinn to allow Tails' body to evolve one stage. With the crystal shortage in general, it was hard to gather the amount they would need, even for the Cursed faction.

To solve this problem, Quinn had asked Alex to prepare the blood crystals that they had received from the Vampire World. He was hoping that perhaps the beasts could process those crystals as well. It was a heavy investment, but Quinn was sure that if they could evolve to Demon tier beasts it would all be worth it.

After everyone had the chance to inspect Vorden's new look, he went on over to where Layla currently was, the two of them looked at each other.

"Hello, Layla. Long time no see, I guess." Vorden said, trying to crack a joke.

Back at military school the two of them hadn't started off the best way, but soon they had grown closer through their experiences together. The girl walked up to Vorden and gave the humanoid beast's body a big hug without hesitation. It was quite an experience to feel the soft fine fur, and her head was on the level of the beast's hard abs.

"It's good to have you back." Layla moved a few steps away to smile at Vorden.

In that brief moment, she had realised something. The spark that she used to have for Vorden had disappeared. Layla wasn't sure if it was due to Vorden inhabiting Tails' body, or if it was because of the time they had spent apart from each other, but looking at him and speaking to him, she didn't have the same feelings that she felt for someone else. Perhaps due to her coming clean about her feelings her mind had made its own resolve.

'I guess this means I know who I really like now. Unless I'm really that shallow and can't have feelings for Vorden now that he is in the body of a beast?' Layla looked towards Sil, but even looking at him she had never felt anything, so she couldn't have been going for Vorden just due to his looks.

---

Arriving at the Cursed ship, everything seemed to be as they left it. There were no signs of sudden attacks or trouble. Quinn had been half expecting Pure, the Dalki, heck maybe even some stragglers from Innu's group to attack them while he, as the leader had been away, but luck seemed to have been on their side for once.

As their ship landed, there were already a couple of people more than eager to welcome them. Sam, Peter and Borden stood at the docking bay waiting in anticipation for them to arrive.

Exiting from the ship, they saw Quinn, the others with the addition of two powerful humanoid beasts. Sam's instincts were kicking in, telling him he should be running for his life, his hands even shaking in fear.

"My brother!" Borden shouted as he leapt forward and jumped on top of the mud beast's shoulders. "I could sense the strong power coming off from you. As expected, I knew my brother wouldn't just accept a normal body. Only the best is suited for him!"

"Borden." Sil called out. "Wrong one."

"Get off me, you little runt!" Raten complained, as his arms moved to grab Borden, attempting to throw him off from his shoulder. However, the two of them entered a power struggle as Borden used all his strength.

"You tricked me, I thought you were my brother!" Borden shouted.

"Borden, it's nice to see you again." Vorden spoke, and hearing his voice, albeit distorted, Borden quickly pushed off his legs, breaking some of the mud on the beast's shoulder and leapt over to Tails' shoulder instead. Raten grumbled, yet his damaged shoulders healed at a visible speed.

"Little Borden, you haven't been slacking off I see. I'm happy to see you as well." Vorden patted Borden's head.

There was such a heartfelt pure smile as the two of them looked at each other, that one person in particular didn't really know what to do. Another walked up to him, all he did was give a slight punch to Vorden's stomach.

"You can't leave us like that." Peter spoke up. "If anyone deserves to leave this world before you do, it's me, and at the moment I'm pretty hard to kill so remember that. Come with us, there's something we need to show you."

Hearing this Borden seemed to smile, but Vorden had no idea what it could be about. He had been told the extent of things that had changed, but actually seeing it all was a different thing altogether.

“It should be okay, I have informed the Cursed members that we have two beasts tamed under us, so they shouldn’t be too shocked. Just don’t get too close to the others, please.” Sam cautioned knowing how his own body felt, perhaps others would faint just seeing them.

Soon, Peter and Borden were practically dragging Vorden with them. Raten didn’t care for whatever they wanted to show him, he was more interested in just getting some rest in. For now, he would look after the little bomb, Sil.

As the two continued to drag him through the ship. Vorden twisted his head left and right, at all the amazing sights he could see. When he had split from Quinn and the others it had been so long and he had been trapped on that island.

‘Quinn you became a World Leader and you’re really starting to change the world. I wish I had a goal like you. What do I want to do?’ Vorden thought, and eventually they had reached a hallway where the sound of excited talking was being heard from outside.

Sliding the door open, a room full of kids could be seen, but they weren’t just any kids.

“Do you remember them? These are all the kids from Blade Island that you wanted to save back then! We’ve been taking care of them ever since. I think it would be good to know that they can finally say thank you.” Peter explained.

—

Back with Sam, there was a lot to be done. Still, after such a trip he granted the group a break period. For Quinn the job list felt endless, he wanted to discuss a few things with Layla about Pure and her powers, check up on Nate and the faction, catch up with Sam about the Cursed planets and Helen, and check up with Alex and the Demon tier weapon.

'So what exactly do you plan to do now? It seems that Sil still has his powers so he should be able to move the beast. Although the person in the tablet did warn you he wouldn't be strong enough for that, but we still need to comply with Eno's wishes.' Vincent asked.

'I still don't think I'm strong enough to fight that dragon. When I used the gauntlet on those crystals, now comparing the two powers I could tell, and there are still problems with those that are part of the Pure group when fighting, but what I want to do more than all of that, is bring the last person back, you Vincent.'

My Vampire System Chapter 1184: Blood delivery

It could already be considered a blessing that the Cursed group managed to find not one, but two humanoid beasts on the same planet, allowing them to fulfill Sil's wish in one go. Finding three humanoid beasts, especially ones of such a high tier would have been too much to ask for.

Of course, this was only possible because of the Earthborn group. If one hadn't escaped, forcing Longblade's group to request backup, the Cursed group might have never found out about Muddy and it was solely because of Logan stumbling around that they met Tails.

After hearing Quinn confirm for the third time that he wanted to bring him back, Vincent had something to say back about it. 'Quinn, I already made it clear that if I had the chance I would support you. After watching you fight for so long, it would be my honor to help you not just by guiding you and giving you advice, but by actively fighting by your side.'

'That being said, I have already lived my life, Quinn. At the end I even gave up being a vampire, so it could eventually end. I was sure that everyone I cared about had already left this world, and I never imagined that there would be someone new I would care about. Which is why I don't want you to waste too much effort on me.'

'Let's just take up Eno on his offer, or see if Logan can create a clone.'

Quinn wanted to interrupt Vincent, and argue back for many reasons. A clone was known not to have a long life, and trusting Eno with such a thing was a big mistake especially since he should have been unaware that Vincent had been still in the system.

'I know you don't trust him, but Eno's clones are still able to use their vampire powers. You've seen it and have felt it. I would be far more helpful if I would have access to my full power, instead of having to learn to use the body of some humanoid beast.'

'As for the ten years, it should be enough time for me to help you win this war, achieve what you wish for and leave you, my family line of Eno. I know you're a Talen, but you have Eno blood in you.'

Having experienced Vincent's life from his perspective, Quinn had shared the old man's feelings at that time. His descendant knew that his ancestor wasn't going to back down on this, he had already made his decision.

'...fine, but we'll ask Logan about this first. If he is unable to create such a body, I will attempt to request one from Eno the next time I meet him, hopefully without him finding out about everything.' Quinn reluctantly agreed.

Finishing this tough conversation, Quinn was ready to just get the rest of the worst parts over and done with.

He decided to find Layla next. On their flight back Quinn had noticed that she had seemed down. Given the circumstances it had been impossible to capture Agent 2, and just like Fex, Quinn had been unable to break Agent 11's mental barrier to force him to speak up.

He still didn't know the whole story of what had happened before he had arrived, but since this was a rather delicate and personal situation, he had refrained from discussing it with her on the ship.

Fortunately, finding specific crew members wasn't too hard for Quinn. Layla was one of those he had personally turned, creating a bond that allowed him to sense her presence within a certain distance, after which it would weaken. As useful as this was, it had nevertheless led to another unfortunate consequence for the two of them.

Quinn knocked on the door of one of the smaller personal training rooms, where he knew Layla to be. Waiting for a few moments, he heard a female voice allowing him entry. Inside, he saw the girl seemingly meditating.

“Do you need to do that because you have a lot on your mind?” Quinn asked Layla, whose eyes were still closed.

She had placed the black sword Longblade had gifted her in front of her.

“I was actually running a few tests with this sword. I’m amazed that it has the ability to disrupt certain abilities. Just by touching it, I’m unable to gather energy in that arm, but the rest of my body is still able to use its powers.”

“I was testing if it could be used to control my emotions, so that... you know, I won’t endanger you guys if I ever take on that form again. Unfortunately, that doesn’t seem to be the case. However, I can still use it to get rid of the negative smog that covers my body, so in a way it does help me.”

This information was similar to what Quinn had gathered as well. The sword only affected what it touched, so it didn’t stop the Vampire Lord from using his abilities, but only through the sword itself or trying to use it directly at the sword.

“I think you know that this wasn’t what I meant when I said you had a lot on your mind. The others told me what Agent 2 said before you changed. Do you want to talk about it?” Quinn asked, trying to find the fine line between asking as a leader, her friend and perhaps something more than that.

“So you’ve heard it as well?” Layla sulked and placed her head down. “I-I don’t know what I want to do, Quinn. On one hand I want to learn the truth about my father, I want to speak to Pure’s leaders to find out what really happened.”

“However, after what Agent 2 said... I mean I knew that she had differences with the other leaders, but for them all to hate her. Maybe he was just saying those things to rile me up? ... but for some reason, I can’t help but feel that some part of it might be true...”

“You might be surprised how much I can sympathise with your desire.” Quinn replied, stretching out one hand to put on her shoulder, but stopping midway, afraid of the possible backlash. “I just want you to know that whatever happened has already happened. I don’t know what really happened, but at the end of the day, your mother had you.”



“Lucy might not have always shown it to you, but there’s one I’m certain about, your mother loved you to the bitter end. Whatever the truth may end up being, you don’t have to shoulder it yourself. We your friends, will be there for you.”

‘... I will be there for you.’

“... thanks, Quinn.” Layla weakly replied, her head still hidden. His sharpened senses told Quinn that she was sobbing lightly. Unsure whether his words of advice actually helped or worsened the situation, Quinn decided to leave the room for now and return to her at a later time after she had a bit of time to think about it.

The next stop on Quinn’s list since it was nearby was to head to the large training room. Here while walking through the halls, he could hear the sound of a loud bang, and the shaking of the ship.

Entering the room, Quinn soon saw the reason for it. Standing at the front, Nate was demonstrating a set of moves, which the others followed. The explosion was actually everyone using Qi in their attacks all at once. When the trainees soon saw the Cursed faction leader enter, they quickly stopped what they were doing and bowed down to him.

“Oh, Boss, you come at the perfect time. I would say I’ve done a pretty good job teaching them, right?” Nate had a smug smile on his face. “You gave me a task and I did everything I could to complete it! Every single one of them knows how to power Qi through their bodies and their weapons. Even if they have weak abilities, they will become a force to be reckoned with!”

“That is good news! I guess now it’s time I show you something else.” Quinn nodded as he pulled out the sword that had been given to him by Longbalde. He slowly raised the sword up, and started to spin the sword until it was around thirty centimeters of the ground. Everyone was looking carefully at the demonstration. Looking at the floor, they could see it.

Quinn had purposely moved the sword slowly so they could watch his minute actions. A scratch mark was being left on the surface of the floor despite the blade not touching it directly.

“This is the second stage of Qi. I’m going to show you a few things, and I hope you can teach others as well.” Quinn requested with a smile.

In the past, Nate would have complained about being given such a task, but he was actually more excited than usual. Qi was perfect for someone like him who studied martial arts and he had developed a strong interest in this strange power.

While trying to teach Nate how to use Qi, Quinn was thinking back to his battle against Agent 2. All of the Agents had also been capable of using Qi. They didn't have any numbers that made them out to be double digit Agents, which led Quinn to believe that Pure had started teaching all of its members this technique.

Unfortunately, Pure seemed to have more knowledge in that regard. The Cursed faction leader only had limited experience with the third stage and he was certain that whatever the Pure Agent leader had used had been an even stronger stage, so they might end up being more powerful.

"I trust you with this." Quinn patted Nate on the back and left the room.

After dealing with his 'Unofficial duties', he decided to visit Sam to check out his official ones, which would take the most time to deal with. Once he was in the command centre, Quinn asked just what Sam thought would be the next best thing.

"Well, I recently received an update from Alex. The good news is that they were able to complete the blood weapons for you. Unfortunately, your Demon tier weapon will still require a bit more time. Once it is done, they'll return to the Cursed ship."

"The ones who need the weapons the most are Helen and the others on the front line of the faction planets. They have scuffled a few times with the Dalki, since their attacks are starting to spread."

"They fought with the Dalki?" Quinn was quite surprised since he hadn't been called or alerted.

"At the moment, all the groups are suffering from their attacks. Don't worry, they have been at a level that we have been able to deal with on our own. Don't forget, you're not the only one who can fight in the Cursed faction. You will be called if needed, Quinn!"

“Anyway, public opinion seems to be back on our side after the video of you being attacked by Head General Innu has been shared, especially amongst those within the Cursed faction. I think this might be a good chance to boost morale. You would just have to visit a few planets as their leader, bringing them the weapons they need right now. They will surely remember that!”

Thinking about it, Quinn didn't know what else there was for him to do. He could train his shadow and blood abilities, but there wasn't a strong partner to do that with. The device Logan had picked up had yet to discover any more demon tier beast, and he was still waiting on the current weapon to be made.

“I guess that's not a bad idea. I'll give Helen a visit and deliver the blood weapons. It should kill some time before the Demon-tier weapon is complete.”

My Vampire System Chapter 1185: Speaking up

Amidst a large dark forest where the leaves were coloured purple and the night sky showed more than one moon, a lone silhouette could be seen fleeing for its life. The beast known as a Bloodsucker had no time to slow down and the quickest choice seemed to be to simply destroy everything in its way, leaving behind a path of destruction, hoping that it would hinder those who had come for it.

It wasn't used to feeling like prey. Usually, it was the predator, hunting down any vampires that would leave the settlement to get their precious blood packs. Unfortunately, today it had chosen the wrong target.

When he had attacked the strange girl who had been on her own, she had retaliated and cut off one of its arms. A little blood pack should have been enough to regenerate it, but even after consuming the blood it carried with it, nothing had happened, informing the creature that something was very wrong.

'I have to get away from this monster!' The Bloodsucker instinctively thought.

The Bloodsucker stopped for a brief moment, as it had no clue where it was. It just knew that it needed to return back to its own hideout where it had been gathering supplies. Alas, the forest was vast and easy to get lost in.

The only orientation on this planet were little landmarks, yet if there had been any other signs, it had destroyed it during its escape. Ready to move on, to hopefully find something, the beast felt chains wrapping around his legs. The next second it was yanked on causing it to fall to the floor.

Grabbing a tree nearby he thought perhaps he could use his superior strength to pull himself away, but instead his hands just ripped through the tree and his body continued to get pulled across the ground.

Doing whatever he could he soon pulled against the chain that was around his foot, his veins building around his singular bicep as he tried to use his mighty strength. The yanking stopped, making him believe that he was saved for a short moment, until he heard ruffling through the trees. It looked up to see that the chains led above, all the way to the girl with the scary looking yellow eyes.

They grew closer and closer until his vision faded... and he was no more.

---

Erin unraveled the chains from his foot and placed them around her forearms once more. She swung her sword, allowing the blood to fall to the ground, before she wiped off any that remained.

"You're getting better at using the chains as a fighting tool." Leo commented, appearing close to her. They both looked at the Bloodsucker's body as they needed to figure out what to do with it.

"Did you find his hideout?" Erin asked.

"Yes, but it worked alone. This Bloodsucker was constantly luring out vampires who would leave the settlement and stealing their blood packs and judging by the bones in its hideout, also killing some of them. You shouldn't feel much guilt for killing one of its kind." Leo answered.

"The real question is, did killing it, help you sate some bloodlust?"

"To a degree. It feels less satisfying than killing a normal vampire. I can control myself even without the suppression chains, but they have proven useful for fighting and are a good tool to slow down the rising

urge. Your method seems to be working. I think I'm able to control it bit by bit as you said." Erin told her teacher.

Having looked after Erin for a while now in the Vampire World, Leo had experienced a number of different things. First, they had traveled far out, to get away from the settlement. This was a large planet and while most of the vampires were concentrated in one place, there were others.

Many vampires had left the settlement, and some of them had turned into Bloodsuckers like this one who were roaming outside. The one thing they craved was human blood, but since there weren't any humans on the planet itself, they couldn't stray too far away from the settlement.

Leo's plan had been to lengthen the time between each kill to satisfy her urge, waiting until the Dhampir couldn't take it any more. The problem Erin had suffered was due to her having suppressed the urge for the longest time, meaning it had come too sudden, and too strong.

Previously, Erin didn't even have time to get used to the feeling and the suppression chains could only postpone the issue, not remove it. Which was why Leo had opted for this method, and from the looks of it, it was working. Fortunately, with Erin being the way she was, and by using Leo's ability, it was easy enough for the duo to track down stray vampires and Bloodsuckers.

As a side-effect, Erin seemed to be growing in strength after each fight. These Bloodsuckers, or vampires that had escaped from the settlement could only do so if they had a certain amount of strength. Being able to survive this long they were quite powerful.

At first, Leo had stayed by his protegee's side, aiding her, but eventually her power had grown enough that she could take care of one on her own. Erin had been evolving in front of his eyes. Before it would have worried the Blind Swordsman, but since it looked like she would be able to control herself one day, it settled his mind.

"How much longer will we have to stay here?" Erin asked.

"We are in no rush. I know you want to go back to see our friends, but given your circumstance we should stay patient and make sure you really have your condition under control. If there is something they can't handle on their own, I'm sure Quinn would have called for us." Leo looked back through the

forests and although he was unable to see it, he was looking straight at the direction of the vampire settlement.

----

On the top floor of the tenth castle, Paul was filling out some paperwork. The whole castle and its men had gone through the daily tasks so many times that they were working like clockwork, leaving the Vampire Knight with little to do. Thanks to the help of Timmy, Xander and also Ashley, who had volunteered to take off some of his burdens there was even less.

'If only the human race could be as peaceful as this one day.' Paul thought to himself. The next second his daydream was interrupted by the sounds of someone knocking at his office's door.

"Knight Paul, you have a visitor." Timmy spoke after entering. He had quite the worried look on his face, which could only mean that it was someone of importance. For a moment Paul thought about whether he should entertain the guest in the throne room, but that didn't seem proper since Quinn was still the Cursed family's leader, even if most of the tasks were being handled by the Vampire Knight.

After hearing who it was, Paul wasn't too worried and instructed them to be brought to his office. A few moments later Kazz was escorted inside.

"It's nice to meet you again after all this time." Paul greeted her standing up, offering her a seat opposite his desk. She accepted the seat and sat down. "I'm sure your unannounced visit isn't just to reminisce about the time when the two of us were in the Cursed faction together. Isn't it against vampire etiquette for knights to meet outside formal meetings? So what brought you here today?"

"I'm the leader of the first family now." Kazz quickly corrected him. It was meant to be a temporary measure since Bryce was elected King. Usually knights weren't allowed to become leaders but there was no one more appropriate at the moment. Besides, the King's castle was busy, so a new first leader had yet to be selected which was why Kazz continued to do this job for the time being.

"Then, doesn't that mean I have even more reason to worry why you are here?" Paul smiled. "So why are you coming to me out of the blue so suddenly?"

For a moment, Kazz remained silent as she wondered what to tell him. 'Would it even change anything if I informed the tenth castle about what my father is doing? Why exactly did I come here?'

Paul could see that whatever matter it was, Kazz seemed to be struggling to tell him, so he remained silent, pouring her a cup of tea, waiting for her to come to a decision. My Vampire System Chapter 1186: Don't go

Kazz had witnessed her father slowly changing. There was a time she had looked up to him as a righteous man that cared about the good of the vampires. Sometimes his actions would be criticised by the others but she knew that her father was always doing it with the interest of the whole settlement in mind.

However, lately she wasn't so sure anymore.

Punishing criminals was one thing. Kazz knew that sometimes the rules had to be bent, especially with a strong enemy on the horizon, yet she couldn't understand how her father could just sacrifice the lives of his fellow vampires without letting them even know about it.

She had seen it, when she had been in that room where the vampires had been working hard to learn the shadow ability. They were doing so, convinced that it was all for the sake of helping the King, to protect their loved ones, yet once they succeeded and attained a certain level of proficiency, Bryce would rob them off everything.

Initially he had told them that it was for the greater good, but as the process repeated she could see him changing. The fact that Kazz was unable to see even a sliver of remorse over what he was doing. Unfortunately, by the time she realised that someone needed to put a stop to her father's deeds, it was too late for her to do anything about it on her own.

Bryce had managed to find supporters in his goal, and with the absolute blood powers of the King, there weren't many that would be a match for him. Eventually, while mulling over her thoughts day by day, and with no one to talk to, a certain person came into her mind, Paul.

During her mission, to stay and look over Quinn and Paul, the former General had taught her many valuable lessons that her father never had. The two of them had discussed many other things and he had made her see certain things in a different way.

If anyone could tell her what the right or wrong thing to do was, she thought it would be Paul, but now sitting opposite him she wasn't sure anymore. She took a sip of the tea he had handed her. The warmth did wonders to calm her down.

'If my father ever found out what I attempted to do, or what I've done, then Paul, no the whole Cursed family will be affected by this as well.' She thought. 'Quinn isn't here and what can Paul actually do on his own?'

Thinking back, she wondered how strong the Vampire Knight before her actually was. From the reports she had heard that he had managed to best Jill, one of the leaders in a one on one fight. Apparently he also hadn't struggled too much in that fight. Still, fighting was not the leader's forte.

However, Bryce had several people around him, even if she tried to gather allies such as Muka and more, there was the risk that one of them would inform the King of her intentions. Even if everything proceeded smoothly and she managed to gather a few of the vampire leaders who weren't involved in this whole mess, what could they do against her father?

All of them together had been unable to stop Cindy, and Bryce had already grown far stronger than the traitorous second family leader, having grown used to the absolute blood powers for a while now.

'There was one...that managed to beat her.' Kazz recalled.

"How about we go for a walk?" Paul suggested, thinking that a change of scenery could loosen her tongue. Finishing the hot beverage, Kazz just nodded. Heading out of the castle, they walked through the tenth area which was more alive than ever.

It was strange for Kazz to see so many vampires living in the inner area. They were mostly Paul's men that were stationed on the outside of each of the gates, the strong reinforced walls and the towers.



They made sure that only those from the tenth family could head inside. The reason why the tenth had more people in the inner area, was because as Quinn had requested they were abolishing the class system treatment, where only a hundred vampires could enter the inner area and learn an ability.

Instead, Quinn treated the Cursed family with great care to help the family as a whole. Including those that were loyal.

“The place is... different from how the other families run things.” Kazz mentioned. “I see a vampire whose skills are only good for cooking with no great power living in a mansion.”

In the inner areas, outside one of the large mansions, a giant outdoor kitchen had been made, and Zee was currently cooking there with a few helpers.

“That is Zee, it is a pain to just consume blood all the time, and it seems he has great skill adding flavour to the meats we eat. He helps the soldiers from Earth remember what they originally were. He brings joy and is essential for our tenth family’s morale. He deserves to have a big house, and as you can see he is more hard working than ever.” Paul introduced the cook.

Saying that, she could see that Zee had a huge grin on his face, and was slaving away over the stove. Everyone who went to him seemed to treat the cook with respect.

“Maybe this only works because the tenth family has no ability to give.” Kazz commented.

“Do you personally think so or is this just the vampire side of you talking, afraid to change the traditions that you have grown up with? Change is scary for some, and different doesn’t necessarily mean it’s bad. I know what it’s like to just rely on strength and I don’t really think it’s a bad thing for certain situations. If we didn’t have the strength, then humans would have lost the first Dalki war, but I wonder...” Paul paused after that.

A lot of the ideas that had been implemented wasn’t his design, but things pushed by Quinn, and Timmy. Lately, he had been seeing more smiles on family members’ faces, and he was enjoying that more than anything, it really made him feel as if he belonged to something greater.

At that moment, one of the family members that was running towards him didn't look to have a smiling face on. The one who had rushed over to his side was none other than Xander. When he stood in front of Paul it was clear he had something to report, stopping as he spotted Kazz by the Vampire Knight's side. Probably the worst person that could have been there.

"Knight Paul, I have important information that I need to pass on to you, and you alone." Xander said, still looking at Kazz in the corner of his eyes. He also needed to do his best not to offend, otherwise that could get him into serious trouble since she was the first family's leader, after all.

Paul could tell what Xander was thinking but at the same time, he knew Kazz hadn't just come to him without prior notice for a general talk. So something needed to be done.

"Just give the report, don't worry about who is around." Paul ordered.

"Y-Yes, Sir. There have been reports of the first family people being seen around the tenth area. They haven't gotten too close, but when a group of ours tracked their movements, we could also see them following members of the tenth family who are not living inside the tenth area." Xander reported.

Hearing this, Kazz knew exactly what those people were attempting to do. They were most likely trying to convince them to come and join the King. Picking people that others wouldn't really care about, or seem suspicious if they were to go missing.

There had already been a number of people that had been picked from the other families. Now it looked like they had moved onto the tenth as well.

'Isn't this too risky, even for the King?' She thought. 'He should know that Quinn cares about his people, more than the other leaders...'

"Sir, there is worse news as well. It's not unusual for family members to get killed off, go missing or to even fall in battle, but the tenth family have not suffered from any such things during the time of our takeover. Which is why I find it strange that during this time, that four members in our family have suddenly gone missing." Xander continued.

“Give me information on those who have gone missing. Even if they don’t belong to the inner family group in the tenth family, they are still our responsibility. Perhaps one of the other families has gotten bold thinking that we won’t do anything to act, but I will personally investigate this matter myself.” Paul ordered and started to walk towards the castle, until he felt someone grab him by the wrist.

“Don’t Paul, please listen to me...if you want to live, don’t go investigating those missing people.” Kazz said, her face almost shedding tears.

My Vampire System Chapter 1187: Ongoing quests

After learning that the blood weapons were already complete, Quinn got ready to travel to where Alex was. Most of those that had stayed with Alex on the planet, carried the Shadow ability making it easy for Quinn to get to where he needed to be.

Due to Quinn’s request being complete, he messaged them beforehand, telling them to turn their shadow active skill on. Since there were multiple shadow users, any one of them would do, but there was a reason why they didn’t just leave them on all the time either. Since Quinn could travel to anyone with the Shadow ability at any point and time, it also meant that Arthur could do the same.

Nobody wanted for the original Punisher to suddenly appear in front of them.

Quinn soon appeared next to Alex. There were around two hundred blood weapons consisting of all types of different weapons, all laid out across the floor on pieces of cloth in his foraging room, each one crafted with care.

“Impressive, right? I think my right arm grew about two times its size making all of these.” Alex declared proudly, picking up a mace and demonstrating a few swings. “And don’t worry I haven’t been slacking on your Demon tier weapon. Well technically it will be a Demon tier accessory. It’s just with the crystal each process takes a long time, so during the waiting periods I managed to do all of these.”

Hearing this, Quinn was worried about whether Alex had even gotten a wink of sleep, but looking around he could see that the forger had recruited a few helpers from amongst the Orbus faction.

Quinn picked up one of the blood weapon swords and used his Inspect skill on it.

[Made with a medium grade blood crystal]

[Not active]

[+10 strength]

[+ 3 agility]

Looking at a few more of the blood weapons, Quinn was wondering how much they would help with the situation the others were in. The weapons had a mixture of three different types of crystal.

Low, Medium and High. Quinn assumed that there might be higher crystal tiers, just none out of the batch that had been given to him, Depending on the quality of the crystal used the weapon would naturally have better stats, but they were still substandard when compared to beast weapons.

However, as soon as Quinn poured some blood from his flask on top of one of the weapons, things changed. The Strength boost it provided nearly doubled in power and a couple even received very interesting active skills. It was an amazing effect, unfortunately it only lasted until the blood energy on the weapon ran out.

“These weapons don’t seem to be the optimal choice when hunting beasts, but they should prove useful for going up against the Dalki.” Quinn concluded, putting his hand out above them all.

“You could always tell them how they work. Even if they run out of blood packs, people could always start using their own blood to fight.” Alex suggested. As long as Quinn explained these weapons, they might become more popular, but the Cursed faction leader was worried that people might think this was some type of vampire curse he was using to trick them to get their blood.

Unfortunately, he couldn’t really blame them. If he was in their shoes he might be thinking the same. The Cursed faction had just gained some positive reputation, it would be unfortunate to lose it so soon again.

The next second, all of the weapons disappeared into Quinn's dimensional space. He was the best person to quickly transport them where they were needed. His next stop was to head off to meet up with Helen on one of the Cursed faction planets, yet before he did there was one last thing he wanted to do.

"Before I forget, do you happen to have any more blood crystals left over?" Quinn asked.

"Did you need one? Oh damn! I'm sorry but I used them all up. I thought we needed the weapons, so I concentrated on making as many as I could. It was already hard to forge the ones you collected with those crystals and I didn't want to waste any of them." Alex replied, worried he might have ruined Quinn's plans.

"It's no problem, I was merely curious about something. You did a great job creating all of those!" Quinn replied, giving him a smile. Once Alex was done with the Demon tier beast gear, he had to make sure to reward the forger adequately.

When touching the blood weapon, Quinn had tried to use the gauntlet to absorb some energy from inside it. Unfortunately, nothing had happened when he did. He had been hoping that it might allow him to increase his blood energy.

It seemed impossible to do so with a processed blood crystal, yet he had no way to try it out with a raw one. It was a shame that they had all been used up. Unlike beast crystals, blood crystals were nearly impossible to get his hands on.

He borrowed a ship and headed off into space. The Cursed faction planets were closer to this one, so it made more sense for Quinn to travel this way. It felt a bit strange, to go out alone for a change. In fact, many people had offered to come with Quinn, especially Vorden.

Having been out of the loop for so long, he had practically begged to be taken along. Quinn would have loved to accede his request, but bringing along a humanoid beast was just a magnet for all kinds of trouble.

In the end, Quinn didn't really see the reason why anyone had to come with him this time. There was to be no fighting, no large enemy, Quinn was just going for more political reasons than anything. He didn't even think he was going to be there long if need be.

Due to this, he had taken a small spacecraft, but there was still ample room for him to move about in, and a kitchen as well as a toilet area. After setting the ship on autopilot, Quinn moved to the centre of the room, and pulled out the indestructible sword.

'The passive skill on this sword, being unbreakable, really suits my style a lot. Due to my strength and my surge in Qi, I'm not sure how many swords could take my full strength. Especially if I was to go up against things like that Demon tier crab.'

Soon Quinn closed his eyes and started to focus on his Qi. He was careful not to overuse it and made sure to keep a perfect balance between the two powers inside of him, before he decided to slowly increase the Qi output to the blade itself.

'When fighting with Agent 2, I learned something. Channelling Qi into a blade is probably the best choice, especially with the second stage of Qi since a person can sharpen and elongate their weapon when needed.'

"While, my gauntlets are powered by my blood abilities. Hand to hand combat is best for this explosive power." Quinn threw out a punch while imagining it in his head.

'Both of these powers are useful in their own situations, and mixing them has its benefits as well. Maybe if I learned how to use the sword decently it could improve my Qi powers. At least while my Qi is stronger than my blood powers it may be something I need to look into.' Quinn thought, as he started to swing the sword a few times, picturing some of the moves he had seen Leo do before.

He was able to imitate them quite well, but training on his own and using them in battle were two different things altogether. While thinking about improving his sword abilities, Quinn took a chance to check out how all of his current stats were doing at the moment.

[Level 67]

With each level up Quinn was still gaining one stat, but the exp requirement was now a number larger than Quinn could even figure out with just one glance. It seemed like the only way to level up was through hard Quests, and by putting himself in dangerous situations.

[Strength 71]

[Agility 70]

[Stamina 73]

[Charm 60]

[Blood control 184]

These were Quinn's regular stats without the aid of equipment. Of course when powering his body with the first stage of Qi, although the number didn't change his body would get a boost on top of this, and there was also the legendary tier set that he had.

For now, Quinn was planning to upgrade his strength as high as possible. Due to the set, he already had agility points beyond the point where it felt like he was actually getting to move any faster. He also still had the active skill.

If anyone was fast enough to react or put a stop to that somehow, Quinn felt like a single stat point here or there wouldn't change the outcome.

Next, Quinn looked at his blood abilities.

[Blood swipe level 5]

[Blood spray Level 5]

[Crescent kick level 4]

[Blood wall Level 3]

[Blood bank level 3]

[Blood bullet level 3]

After reaching level five with his Blood swipe skill, he had also unlocked Blood barrage, it was the same with Blood spray which made a new move.

[Blood barrage level 1]

[Blood shotgun level 1]

On top of this, Quinn could use Blood control to the degree where he could perform moves such as the Blood drill, and could combine attacks creating a blood hammer strike and such, but these weren't skills that could level up, and seemed to increase in strength depending on Quinn's blood control level. This was also true for Blood Harding as well.

Then lastly there were Quinn's shadow abilities.

[Shadow control level 4]

[Shadow cloak level 4]

[Shadow void level 3]

[Shadow equip level 5]



[Shadow eater even 1]

[Shadow hop]

[Shadow path level 2]

[Shadow On]

[Shadow link]

[Shadow sink]

[Shadow clone]

They were powerful on their own, but they were even stronger than he combined them together, such as when he was using Shadow control and Blood swipe able to create the Shadow scythes.

He also had created the Shadow disks, that worked great with his soul weapon shadow overload, and there were still skills he had yet to perfect or find the right time to use, from the tablet he had discovered at the fourteenth casele.

After finishing looking at his stats, the last thing he wanted to do was look at his ongoing Quests that were yet to be completed.

[Become the Vampire King]

Quinn was a bit surprised the Quest hadn't been marked failed, after Bryce got elected as the King. Was he supposed to wait until the next election... or did his Quest want him to usurp the position?

[Learn about the Talen family]

Quinn would love to solve this one, but so far he only had that strange symbol and the black sword. Hopefully, bringing it to the tablet might reveal more. He was becoming more curious as he found more things related to his seemingly normal family.

Then there was the last ongoing Quest.

[Discover something beyond the Vampire Lord]

Were it not for the separate Vampire King Quest, Quinn would have believed that to be the thing 'beyond' a Vampire Lord. However, since he had received this one as well, there should be something else. Did the System want him to become an Original... or something else entirely?

Whatever the case, Quinn had no idea how to go about it, or how close he might be to achieving it. Right now, he noticed that a planet came into his view.

My Vampire System Chapter 1188: The Cursed Faction Family

Before Quinn was to meet with Helen, he decided to do a bit of reading on the reports that had been given to him from Sam. The reports themselves gave details of each planet that the Cursed faction owned, the crystal output of each one, and the quality of crystals from each faction.

On top of this, it had a rating set for the different Shelters based on the planet. All the factions that they worked with and were technically allied with the Cursed faction. Looking at the holographic screen before him, Quinn was trying his best to memorise what he could.

'Eighteen planets in total, and three A rank plus Shelters, one of them which used to belong to the Daisy faction.' Quinn was trying to remember the details. 'I never realised how big the Cursed faction was or how much work Sam and the others have been doing. The information has even been put in a way for me, so it's easy to understand.'

It was true, Sam had worked with Logan in order to sort the information so it could visualise the importance of each planet. It was set up like each planet was a game with different stats. Different Shelters had higher and lower numbers of people living in them. But they were all just important.

Sometimes, Travelers families wouldn't live on the same planet and opted for a safer one. At the same time, they worked on the more dangerous planets. Crystal output was greater on lower-tier planets, yet high tier crystals planets had a lower output but higher grades.

Even with the factions themselves, the strength wasn't as simple as Quinn first thought. The planets with more dangerous tier beasts had higher level Shelters. Usually, only one faction worked and reported to Daisy on these, which in turn reported to the Cursed faction. Still, for other planets, there would sometimes even be multiple factions.

'I can imagine all the arguments that they would have to deal with already.' Quinn thought.

What came as a surprise was as soon as Quinn had come close to the planet, there was already a fleet of ships surrounding him. Seeing them reminded him of a bad feeling since the last time this had happened, they were attacked. However, this was vastly different from the time before, especially since the design of the ships were...unique, to say the least.

Each one had been personalised beyond what others would usually do. All set in bright colours that stood out with painted pictures, or stickers, whatever they were, all over the ships. Straight away, Quinn knew that these were from the Daisy faction.

Soon a request was put in for Quinn to accept an incoming message.

"It's nice to meet you again, I hope you can stay for a while this time, so I can give you a well and proper tour."

The voice on the other end was none other than Helen. The small ship, docked inside one of the larger ones that picked Quinn up, and now he was travelling in the daisy ship.

When Quinn descended from his spaceship, he was surprised to see that only one person was there to welcome him.

“I didn’t want you to be scared since I know what happened with the Earthborn group. Well, I think everyone knows what happened, so I thought this whole tour would go better with someone you trusted a little more.” Helen said.

When looking at Helen, Quinn couldn’t help but stare at her for a few reasons. For one, he would often see her in some type of battle outfit, this time was no different, but the armour allowed for one to see a bit more skin than Quinn was used to.

Especially in the upper department, since she was wearing a tight like corsets beast gear that pushed up a certain pair of twins in the chest department. At the same time, her pink hair was vibrant as ever, as if she had just finished having it coloured.

‘Quinn, I would be a little careful with this one.’ Vincent commented. ‘I think she knows exactly what she’s doing.’

“You look...nice.” Quinn finally said, not knowing what to really say, and two of them were soon seen walking off. When Helen met with Quinn, she expected more of a reaction from him, but something was off.

She couldn’t imagine what he had been through, even after seeing the videos, and they didn’t show everything that was going on either.

‘Is it because of my reaction from last time, is there really no way to fix this?’ She wondered. It was crushing her a little inside to know this. Epicly since one person had an advantage over her. The fact that she could be by his side through all of his struggles. That was sure to win her some brownie points.

Eventually, Quinn had arrived at the Daisy faction. The Shelter was unique. The outside on the walls itself were covered in vines, and there was plenty of greenery inside. While the exterior was full of fields with different coloured flowers.

Helen had given Quinn a schedule when he arrived as an announcement had already been made for everyone to gather at the centre. A stage was also busy being prepared, and he was chucked in the centre of things needing to get to work almost immediately.

Quinn was waiting on the floor grounds for the preparations to be complete. While Helen would give him a few more words of advice.

“We will try our best in the next week or so to visit the other planets. I have split the time up so we can visit four planets a day. Also with ample time for you to relax and get to know the Shelter and people together.

“We will use the teleporters as a one-off to travel between each of the locations as well. With the weapons you bought, Sam told us that you have roughly two hundred. We have decided that the best thing to do is for you to personally award them. We have gathered the top 11 or 12 fighters from each planet, where you can personally award them. Here is a list of their names.” Helen handed out.

Seeing how well organised everything was, just because Quinn had planned to visit him was a surprise. What was even more mind boggling was he had no part in it. He didn't ask people to do this, nor was he part of the hassle and trouble involved to make it like this.

This was because Quinn still had yet to realise just how much of an influential figure he was. This was the start of him learning about it more.

When the stage was ready, and the crowd of people had gathered. Helen was the first to go onto the stage. There were loud cheers, mostly coming from female voices since many of those at the Daisy Shelter were travellers and mainly female.

Soon after, Helen introduced Quinn to step on the stage as well. When he appeared, he could hear or whisper going around.

“He looks pretty human and handsome. I never knew he was so good looking in person.”

“Maybe it wouldn't be that bad getting my blood sucked by him.”

“Helen told us that it's because of him. There wasn't much change to the Daisy faction. In fact, our lives have been a bit better as we share resources and don't fight with the other factions as much as we used to.”

It was strange, strange for Quinn to hear mostly positive things about him for once when coming to see a place. Looking over at Helen, he smiled at her for the first time since he had arrived.

“I know the struggle you all have been having on the front line. Hunting beasts every day for the sake of this war. You are an essential part of this Cursed faction, and you have continued to support and help all of us.

“Honestly, I don’t like using the word faction. For me, I prefer to use the word family. For me, it makes it, so our bond is stronger. I didn’t really have a family growing up, but the fact that there are so many people around who are willing to help fight for the family that I made... then in return, I will do the same. No matter what, I will support you.” Quinn said.

At first, there was silence, it wasn’t because they thought what Quinn said was wrong but it just wasn’t what they were expecting. For a leader to come to them and say these things, they weren’t sure if cheering, a slow clap or what was appropriate.

When Helen started to clap and cheer, the rest followed, hearing his speech.

Next, it was time for Quinn to read out the names. In total, there were two men and ten girls who were to receive the blood weapons. However, their excitement dwindled when they laid their hands on the weapons.

They could tell that, unlike the beast equipment, although the weapons were strong, they didn’t infuse them with the same type of energy. Because of this, for those that received the awards, not everyone was exactly happy with them.

“What is this?” a person said, throwing the weapon on the floor.

My Vampire System Chapter 1189

Trophy weapons

It was the last person to be called up onto the stage who had openly shown her disdain for the rewards, a young woman by the name of Iree Johnston, not much older than Quinn. Her weapon that was given to her was a long spear, scarlet red in colour.

Not all blood weapons had this coloration, but the ones Alex had crafted were special in that the Blood fairy had added a drop of his own blood during the process.

Of course, this made them a liability, since these weapons could one day be used against the Cursed faction, but at the same time, the way Quinn saw it, if the two forces were to ever clash and he wouldn't be around, humanity would stand a chance.

Still, it was future proofing himself.

Everyone who had received one of these weapons had quickly come to the conclusion that they weren't as great as their current weapons. They did appreciate getting a reward in public, and decided to consider it a sort of trophy rather than something that could be used for battle.

"What are we supposed to do with these toys? Why even waste precious crystals to create something so useless?" Iree confronted Quinn, unhappy with the spear.

'I thought that the Daisy faction might take all the blood weapons for themselves, but since they are splitting it like this, I should have asked Helen to explain it to those who receive these blood weapons beforehand.' Quinn thought in hindsight.

Gasps sounded throughout the crowd and Helen was about to storm the stage and give Iree the biggest beating of her life, but the Cursed faction leader raised his hand, signalling her to let him deal with it.

"Every day we risk our lives out there, doing what we can to defeat beasts to harvest their crystals! We even had to fight off some of the Dalki recently, and this is what you do with the percentage we have to pay you?! Why don't you give us something useful, or why isn't that giant Cursed ship on the front lines out here with us?!" Iree complained.

Quinn had been half-expecting someone to react like this, in fact, he was quite surprised that those before her hadn't done so already. He would have preferred teaching it to them somewhere less public, since they required the use of blood, but now it looked like he would have to give a live demonstration.

Walking over, Quinn picked up the spear from the ground and dusted it off. "Do you really think I would have come here personally to just hand out some 'toys'? The weapons you've been awarded are no ordinary beast weapons, designed by the Cursed faction's team to help you face our one enemy." The Vampire Lord explained as he pulled out his flask.

"I can't fault you for thinking that these weapons aren't better than what you are using, but that's only if you use them against beasts. It's an entirely different story if you use them against the Dalki. I think it will be far more efficient to show you what I mean, care to spar with me?" Quinn suggested.

"A fight with you? I'm no idiot! All of us know what you are and how strong you are. You could probably beat me with an ordinary weapon!" Iree refused.

"Don't worry, I don't intend to use any of my beast gear or abilities. I simply planned to prove to you the strength of this weapon." Quinn's shadow covered his body and his gear disappeared into his dimensional space. He had originally been in his full set, as it gave him the air of a powerful leader. He wanted to inspire confidence in the Cursed faction with it.

"How about this, I can see that you have your own King tier spear by your side. Please let me borrow it for the sake of this demonstration. You should know how strong it is, so please use the spear I provided just now to attack me, while I will just defend myself. Afterwards you can be the judge about how effective a weapon is." Quinn suggested.

Iree agreed to this, but before the Cursed faction leader handed over the spear he poured a green liquid from the flask onto the weapon.

"Green liquid... is that Dalki blood?" Some of those in the crowd whispered amongst themselves as they watched the blood weapon start to light up and radiate with power. Not wasting any time, Quinn threw the spear which landed directly in front of Iree, piercing the stage. She pulled it out and gave it a few swings, just so that he could immediately tell her mistake.



“This... how is that possible?” Iree asked. If she hadn’t seen it for herself, she could have sworn this was a completely different weapon from before.

“We have the best forgers and the smartest minds in the Cursed faction. They have been working day and night to create a new type of weapon that gets stronger when fighting against the Dalki!” With everyone’s attention on the new weapon, Quinn thought this to be the best time to explain.

All of them believed him, amazed at the ingenuity of the Cursed faction. The ones who had received the blood weapons, suddenly tightened their grips, suddenly appreciating the gesture far more than just minutes ago.

However, the liquid inside wasn’t actual Dalki blood. Knowing where he was going, Logan had come up with an idea, in case such a demonstration became necessary. Blood from his arm would come out green as well, and same for Borden, but Borden was too small.

Using the same amount of blood in their body, Logan was able to create a blood-like substance that was green in colour. The flask simply contained human blood. It was a shame that Quinn was unable to give all those with a blood weapon a flask but there were simply too many and he didn’t have enough.

Similar to vampires, the blood needed for blood weapons needed to be fresh. Away from the eyes of the others, Quinn would tell them the truth at a later time, so they understood that it just needed to be blood that activated the blood weapons.

With that, the event was over. The Shelter threw a little party with food and more this was the time for Quinn to try and get to know the members of his faction, but it would only last a couple of hours. He couldn’t afford to waste more time, since he would have to move to the next planet where he would hand out more of them to those deserving.

If he wasn’t a vampire this whole thing would have been quite exhausting but Quinn felt fine, and the kind words actually improved his mood. It was reassurance that he was doing the right thing.

When Quinn went to talk to the others, he found many of them thankful to him. Talking about the help they had received from the Cursed faction in many forms. Some of them talked about how their family members had struggled to get jobs, but had received one thanks to him. Unsure what they meant, Quinn asked more about it, until he figured out that it was due to the Green family’s involvement.

'Those guys, they are doing so many things to make the Cursed faction such a great group.' Quinn was surprised and decided that he would have to thank them one of these days.

Once time was up, Helen grabbed him, and they moved on to the next planet, where the process was repeated. The faction leader of the said planet he would be on. would also be part of the group introducing him.

Here, he had a similar experience, where the others had given him praise, thanking him as the representative of the Cursed faction for looking after their families and more. These people knew the truth more than the others from the outside. With what blood Quinn had left he would provide a small demonstration at the end.

'Everyone puts so much trust into me as their leader, but honestly it never really felt like I was doing it for them, but just me. To improve my own situations and to stop others from ending up in a similar situation to my old self. I didn't realise how many people my actions would affect.' Quinn thought.

After the second party was over. They briefly returned to the Daisy faction where Quinn was granted a short break, before heading off to the third planet. Seeing that his mood was a lot better Helen was proud of what she had done.

"Quinn, I like seeing you like this. I hope that I can see this smile on your face for the rest of your life." She said standing up, ready to go to the third planet. Going through the main base, they eventually reached the teleporter room.

One of the Daisy faction members proceeded to turn on the teleporter, but there was no reaction.

"That's strange, why won't the teleporter turn on?" The worker wondered, scratching his head.

"Hmm maybe that teleporter is faulty. Let's switch the schedules around. Please open the portal to Planet Frediani instead." Helen ordered, but the worker got the same result as he tried to open the portal.

'Two teleporters not working, doesn't that mean...no..' Quinn thought, as a disastrous thought had entered his mind.

\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n, it's only \$3 dollar a month and read My Werewolf System exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: .

For MVS artwork and updates follow me on Instagram and Facebook: .

If you find any errors ( broken links, non-standard content, etc.. ), Please let us know so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Tip: You can use left, right, A and D keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Trophy weapons

It was the last person to be called up onto the stage who had openly shown her disdain for the rewards, a young woman by the name of Iree Johnston, not much older than Quinn. Her weapon that was given to her was a long spear, scarlet red in colour.

Not all blood weapons had this coloration, but the ones Alex had crafted were special in that the Blood fairy had added a drop of his own blood during the process.

Of course, this made them a liability, since these weapons could one day be used against the Cursed faction, but at the same time, the way Quinn saw it, if the two forces were to ever clash and he wouldn't be around, humanity would stand a chance.

Still, it was future proofing himself.

Everyone who had received one of these weapons had quickly come to the conclusion that they weren't as great as their current weapons. They did appreciate getting a reward in public, and decided to consider it a sort of trophy rather than something that could be used for battle.

"What are we supposed to do with these toys? Why even waste precious crystals to create something so useless?" Iree confronted Quinn, unhappy with the spear.

'I thought that the Daisy faction might take all the blood weapons for themselves, but since they are splitting it like this, I should have asked Helen to explain it to those who receive these blood weapons beforehand.' Quinn thought in hindsight.

Gasps sounded throughout the crowd and Helen was about to storm the stage and give Iree the biggest beating of her life, but the Cursed faction leader raised his hand, signalling her to let him deal with it.

"Every day we risk our lives out there, doing what we can to defeat beasts to harvest their crystals! We even had to fight off some of the Dalki recently, and this is what you do with the percentage we have to pay you?! Why don't you give us something useful, or why isn't that giant Cursed ship on the front lines out here with us?!" Iree complained.

Quinn had been half-expecting someone to react like this, in fact, he was quite surprised that those before her hadn't done so already. He would have preferred teaching it to them somewhere less public, since they required the use of blood, but now it looked like he would have to give a live demonstration.

Walking over, Quinn picked up the spear from the ground and dusted it off. "Do you really think I would have come here personally to just hand out some 'toys'? The weapons you've been awarded are no ordinary beast weapons, designed by the Cursed faction's team to help you face our one enemy." The Vampire Lord explained as he pulled out his flask.

"I can't fault you for thinking that these weapons aren't better than what you are using, but that's only if you use them against beasts. It's an entirely different story if you use them against the Dalki. I think it will be far more efficient to show you what I mean, care to spar with me?" Quinn suggested.

"A fight with you? I'm no idiot! All of us know what you are and how strong you are. You could probably beat me with an ordinary weapon!" Iree refused.

“Don’t worry, I don’t intend to use any of my beast gear or abilities. I simply planned to prove to you the strength of this weapon.” Quinn’s shadow covered his body and his gear disappeared into his dimensional space. He had originally been in his full set, as it gave him the air of a powerful leader. He wanted to inspire confidence in the Cursed faction with it.

“How about this, I can see that you have your own King tier spear by your side. Please let me borrow it for the sake of this demonstration. You should know how strong it is, so please use the spear I provided just now to attack me, while I will just defend myself. Afterwards you can be the judge about how effective a weapon is.” Quinn suggested.

Iree agreed to this, but before the Cursed faction leader handed over the spear he poured a green liquid from the flask onto the weapon.

“Green liquid... is that Dalki blood?” Some of those in the crowd whispered amongst themselves as they watched the blood weapon start to light up and radiate with power. Not wasting any time, Quinn threw the spear which landed directly in front of Iree, piercing the stage. She pulled it out and gave it a few swings, just so that he could immediately tell her mistake.

“This... how is that possible?” Iree asked. If she hadn’t seen it for herself, she could have sworn this was a completely different weapon from before.

“We have the best forgers and the smartest minds in the Cursed faction. They have been working day and night to create a new type of weapon that gets stronger when fighting against the Dalki!” With everyone’s attention on the new weapon, Quinn thought this to be the best time to explain.

All of them believed him, amazed at the ingenuity of the Cursed faction. The ones who had received the blood weapons, suddenly tightened their grips, suddenly appreciating the gesture far more than just minutes ago.

However, the liquid inside wasn’t actual Dalki blood. Knowing where he was going, Logan had come up with an idea, in case such a demonstration became necessary. Blood from his arm would come out green as well, and same for Borden, but Borden was too small.

Using the same amount of blood in their body, Logan was able to create a blood-like substance that was green in colour. The flask simply contained human blood. It was a shame that Quinn was unable to give all those with a blood weapon a flask but there were simply too many and he didn't have enough.

Similar to vampires, the blood needed for blood weapons needed to be fresh. Away from the eyes of the others, Quinn would tell them the truth at a later time, so they understood that it just needed to be blood that activated the blood weapons.

With that, the event was over. The Shelter threw a little party with food and more this was the time for Quinn to try and get to know the members of his faction, but it would only last a couple of hours. He couldn't afford to waste more time, since he would have to move to the next planet where he would hand out more of them to those deserving.

If he wasn't a vampire this whole thing would have been quite exhausting but Quinn felt fine, and the kind words actually improved his mood. It was reassurance that he was doing the right thing.

When Quinn went to talk to the others, he found many of them thankful to him. Talking about the help they had received from the Cursed faction in many forms. Some of them talked about how their family members had struggled to get jobs, but had received one thanks to him. Unsure what they meant, Quinn asked more about it, until he figured out that it was due to the Green family's involvement.

'Those guys, they are doing so many things to make the Cursed faction such a great group.' Quinn was surprised and decided that he would have to thank them one of these days.

Once time was up, Helen grabbed him, and they moved on to the next planet, where the process was repeated. The faction leader of the said planet he would be on. would also be part of the group introducing him.

Here, he had a similar experience, where the others had given him praise, thanking him as the representative of the Cursed faction for looking after their families and more. These people knew the truth more than the others from the outside. With what blood Quinn had left he would provide a small demonstration at the end.

'Everyone puts so much trust into me as their leader, but honestly it never really felt like I was doing it for them, but just me. To improve my own situations and to stop others from ending up in a similar situation to my old self. I didn't realise how many people my actions would affect.' Quinn thought.

After the second party was over. They briefly returned to the Daisy faction where Quinn was granted a short break, before heading off to the third planet. Seeing that his mood was a lot better Helen was proud of what she had done.

"Quinn, I like seeing you like this. I hope that I can see this smile on your face for the rest of your life." She said standing up, ready to go to the third planet. Going through the main base, they eventually reached the teleporter room.

One of the Daisy faction members proceeded to turn on the teleporter, but there was no reaction.

"That's strange, why won't the teleporter turn on?" The worker wondered, scratching his head.

"Hmm maybe that teleporter is faulty. Let's switch the schedules around. Please open the portal to Planet Frediani instead." Helen ordered, but the worker got the same result as he tried to open the portal.

'Two teleporters not working, doesn't that mean...no..' Quinn thought, as a disastrous thought had entered his mind.

My Vampire System Chapter 1190: Preparing for the wors

"Me, pick me! It's my turn next!" A little blonde-haired boy around nine years of age yelled. Adeel soon found himself being lifted and placed on top of the shoulders of the dark coloured humanoid Emperor tier beast, greatly enjoying the softness of its fur as he started to rub his head against it. He wasn't the only kid on the beast's body though, as two more were tightly holding on to its biceps and looked to be doing the same thing.

Seeing this made the other kids who had yet to have a turn a little jealous. While the others who had already enjoyed feeling the soft fur wanted to go again.

“Ready... and go!” Vorden shouted as he leapt through the air and spun his body. Using his wind powers, he was able to leap a great distance and with the help of his tails, he could spin his body even faster.

The kids’ hair was thrown back and wind was hitting their ecstatic faces as they were screaming out in joy. Once Vorden reached one end of the training room, he used the wall to push himself off with his legs, going back in the other direction.

A group of children could be seen jumping up and down demanding to be the next ones to be allowed on the fun ride. Just seconds before the beast was about to crash into them, he stopped inches away from them, hitting a wall of wind he had erected.

“That was awesome!” Adeel exclaimed as he jumped off Tail’s body. “Vorden, your new body is so much greater than your old one. This is so much more fun!”

The kid’s honesty was warming Vorden’s heart, and the smile on their faces even more so. When Peter and Sil had dragged him in front of the other Blade kids, he was unsure how they would react. His original plan had been to just leave them be, letting them think of him as a scary beast that was on the ship. After all, he never believed that he was the one who had saved them. Without the help of the others, and especially Sil they would have never succeeded in the first place. His attempt had just ended in failure.

However, that plan was ruined in seconds as Peter and Sil had quickly revealed his real identity. The last time they had seen him had been back at the temple when Vorden had spent time with them. Rather than with fear, the kids had been hugely interested in just what happened for Vorden to end up in his current body.

After explaining the details, and dragging out an unwilling Tails for a brief period of time, they had him surrounded. One thing led to another and right now Vorden had become their practical play toy.

“Aren’t you getting tired?” Layla, who was in the room as well, asked Vorden. With Vorden’s return, she wanted to talk to the original gang more often. As such, she had followed behind Vorden, Peter and Sil. There was no longer and Erin or Cia, and the regular cursed faction although weren’t treating her badly, were cautious of her ever since they had revealed that they were V. “I mean, you’ve been at it for an hour now.”



“Tail’s body has much more stamina to spare. Besides, I actually see this as a form of training. I have to be careful with his beast powers to make sure I don’t hurt any of the kids. Bit by bit I feel like I’m increasing my speed and power and pushing myself.” Vorden explained. “And all the kids seem to enjoy this experience as well.”

In the training room, not too far from where they were, Raten was also surrounded by five of the Blade kids, each one of them with a beast weapon in their hand. Raten, had both of his hands bladed, and was waiting for them to attack.

Eventually, one of the kids charged in with a thrust, but Raten was able to quickly disarm him. He parried the blow at the perfect time and used skill rather than strength. Soon, the blade was heading towards the kid on the floor, Raten expecting him to do something, but just ended up flinching instead, before the blade was stopped.

“Don’t forget, I’m a Blade as well!” Raten reminded them gleefully. “I know the weakness of your powers, I’ve also experienced the training you all went through. There will be times when we have no powers, so we need to rely on beast weapons as well. At other times, there will be abilities that are enhanced through the beast weapons. Take this seriously, since I’m doing this for your own good!”

On top of this, the training was also meant to put them in life and death situations, although surprisingly it didn’t seem like Raten could quite push them like Hilston had done. In turn their bodies would slowly unlock the natural human body powers, the power of Qi.

For the past hour Raten had been giving some of the kids a hand to hand combat lesson. He was just as skilful as he was before, if not better now using Muddy’s body. If the Blade kids got his seal of approval, or were completely exhausted then they would be granted a ride on Tails.

“Is it really necessary to train the kids this much?” Layla wondered out loud, looking at their tired faces. She felt conflicted having to imagine that given their young age they could be made to fight, even if they were ‘special’.

“Yes.” Sil answered immediately. “Hilston will not give up. We have taken something precious from him. Not just me, but he will want all of us back, simply because he believes we belong to him. He is someone who takes pride in claiming to be the strongest, and since someone dared to cross him and take his possession he will do everything he needs to retrieve us.”

“The Cursed ship has suffered attacks before, luckily Borden was there to help them last time, but what if there might come a time when the threat is so great that they will need to fend for themselves?”

“We will not let any of them get hurt!” Vorden declared as he came back from another lap, and stared at the Borden, Peter, Sil, Layla and Raten.

“Great, then doesn’t that mean we need to train as well.” Borden said getting up and pointing to one of them in particular. The one he was pointing at was none other than Sil.

“Let’s show everyone how much you have improved.” Borden said as he got into a fighting stance.

There was one part where Sil was lacking in comparison to the others, and this was his hand to hand combat skills. Although Sil might have been able to hold more abilities, even without beast gear, Hilston was a monster in speed and strength compared to himself. Which was why, he also was starting to train his body against someone, who could be at least a little comparable to the monster.

Seeing everyone gearing up while she was sitting around doing nothing, Layla’s body was itching as well. She grabbed the black blade she wasn’t quite adept in and thought who would be the best person to teach her.

‘Wait a second, isn’t there one person?’ Layla thought.

Moments later, Layla had gone out from the training room the others were in, and found herself heading towards Quinn’s personal training room. The place honestly no longer felt like it belonged to Quinn, since more and more people were starting to use it. However, its main use these days was for those with blood powers and shadow abilities to practice their use inside.

Especially since Quinn could now also practice in his shadow void.

Opening the room up, she found the person she was looking for but he wasn’t alone.

Fex had his hands held out like a puppet, and currently they were attached to none other than Agent 11. He had a sword in his hand, and Fex was practising his skills carefully. Agent 11 had nuggets of sweat dripping from his forehead, and soon she saw a slip up in the actions.

“How many times do I have to tell you not to fight the flow? You’re just making it worse!” Fex yelled, and that’s when he noticed Layla in the room as well.

When thinking of swordsmanship, Layla thought back to one person who had controlled Erin in the past, showing her things she was unable to do before, and just now she had seen a small glimpse of it.

“Fex, I want to be your puppet for a little while,” Layla said.

My Vampire System Chapter 1191: Wide scale

Elsewhere on the Cursed ship, Sam was taking what could be called a break for him. Instead of tending to his normal duties, he was accompanying Bonny, Void and several drones that were filming the whole area, as they walked through the building.

Of course, these duties could have been handed to someone else, but Sam actually wanted to meet those that had helped their image during their tough times.

“Allow me to thank you for your video report. It turned out better than I thought and the effects of it have not gone unnoticed.” Sam complimented as they walked over to the canteen to grab some food. The reporter duo had returned to the Cursed ship because the public demanded a follow up report on the Cursed faction, something the two of them were happy to accede to.

They had initially wanted to follow Quinn, filming him as he interacted with the Cursed faction’s planets, but Sam had denied their request. Officially, the reason had been that they didn’t want those living on the planets to think that this was just a mere publicity stunt.

There was also the fact that Quinn had chosen to go out alone, so there would be nobody who could protect them in case anything were to happen. Although the two of them were war reporters, they had

felt like their life had been on the line far too many times recently, with the last one being an especially close case.

Bonny had dealt with the crazy situation they had been in a little better than Void, there were many times where he would wake in the middle of the night, seeing a pair of red eyes following him. If it wasn't that, then it would be the laugh of the crazy head general that had tried to blow the whole ship they were on to bits.

In reality, Sam just didn't want the blood weapons existence to become public just yet. It was one thing if some rumours would come up about these new types of weapons, but if they were to be filmed, the other groups would want to get their hands on them as well, especially after seeing their effects.

The Cursed faction had also never asked the vampires if this was an okay thing to do. Seeing these types of weapons could very well cause quite the stir if Bryce came to know about it. However, Sam also felt like the vampires must have known what they were doing as well. Although no one was now following them like before, it would be unwise to have no one keep an eye on what the humans were doing, or they were doing.

"It was the least we could do after Quinn, Logan and everyone saved our lives back then. I still find it hard to believe that people can act that crazy, despite having seen it happen countless times before. People always seem to surprise me. We believe that everyone has the same sense of justice, our views on what is right and wrong are similar, but that's not the case at all. Many times I have learnt that opinions are divided on certain subjects."

Sitting down in the canteen, the drones continued to float around the three of them. They had to make sure to catch anything at any time. Something always interesting happened when they were around the Cursed and they did not want to miss out this time. It was because of this that many didn't get close to them while they were eating. It just felt strange for a flying camera to be pointed at your face while you're trying to enjoy your meal.

Bonny noticed that Sam's lunch consisted of what looked like a juice box. Placing a straw inside, he took a few sips, and a red liquid could be seen shooting up the straw.

"Do you want to try some?" Sam, jokingly offered, before putting it down and continuing.

“The world is already starting to see a change. History tells us that people’s views of what’s right and wrong are decided by society. If you think about it, the norm of a century ago is very different from today’s norm.” Sam spoke with a serious look on his face as if he had spent a lot of time pondering over this topic.

“It’s hard to think back to a time before the Dalki, but I wonder what will happen to the world once they are gon-.”

It was at that moment, that red flashing light could be seen going off throughout the Cursed ship. Those who wore watches started to flash, indicating that big news was coming their way.

----

The new Supreme Commander had been taught the basics of being a vampire while on the Cursed Ship. He had been gifted a special ring, as well as a flask that he could always carry blood in.

With his training, it focused on the few basic blood spells that almost everyone knew. However, Sach had focused on a few different aspects. After he had gotten used to his stronger and faster body combining it with his beast equipment.

He had been very lucky, in that he was able to relearn his ability from before. It was an original ability and was over the moon that things worked out. Combining this with what he had learnt, his body had become quite something because of it.

‘The only thing that I was unable to learn was how to actually use my new skills in combat. I hopped onto the virtual fighters game a few times, but I’m still slightly out of sync. I also decided to neglect using my red aura powers. There is a chance that they could link the martial arts god to me and then link the V powers back to myself as well.

‘One Horn, just you wait. I will return the favour tenfold!’

After learning everything that needed to be done, he had headed back to the main Bertha ship, the one Oscar would use as his command centre.

As soon as everything looked okay, he planned to head back to Earth, in order to sort out everything else that needed to be done as his successor. Samantha would take care of the crew and those on the Curse ship. It just felt right to leave those under Oscar to be in control with Samantha. Instead, Sach would gather people that he trusted.

There was only one close personal that he had brought with him originally belonging to Oscar, which was Jane, his personal assistant.

A ship had been prepared and he was ready to head out. That was, until an urgent message came through.

“Supreme commander, Sach please head to the command centre immediately!” A message was sent out through the ship.

The main Bertha ship’s command centre was special, in that it was filled with a plethora of screens and workers who monitored them at all times. It was directing information from Earth, and all the machinery it had set up on the other planets, mainly used to detect incoming signals of rising beast energy.

“Sir, urgent reports are coming through! We have detected a large force of energy heading towards different sections of the beast solar system!”

‘The Dalki, they are attacking again, and a large force. Last time it was the Graylash section, what area will it be now?’ Sach wondered.

“I just need a brief summary of the reports, focus on where the signals are coming from and calculate how much help we need to send out!” Supreme Commander Sach ordered his subordinate.

There was brief silence before he received an answer, and on the large glass display, the report was now shown to everyone in the room. The man didn’t have to say anything, because Sach could see it for himself.

‘This is it, they have decided to attack now. The large signals of energy, they’re heading to all three sections of the beast planets. The Graylash group, the Earthborn group and the Cursed are all under attack...’

## My Vampire System Chapter 1193: Fight for Freedom

The sounds of alarm blaring throughout the Cursed ship were of course related to the unending influx of Dalki attack reports happening throughout the beast solar system. Supreme Commander Sach had ordered to share their intel in real time with not only the main groups' faction leaders but also all their known affiliates.

Right now, the Cursed faction's command centre was busier than ever and everyone on board the ship was preparing their beast gear and checking their supplies. A lot of them had families living on the Cursed faction planets and they were now extremely worried about their well being.

Of course the one who was responsible for deciding how to deal with this situation was none other than Sam. The frown on his forehead was deep as he was troubled as to how to react.

'What's the right thing to do?' Sam considered the options as he looked at the situation as a whole. Those in the Cursed faction wished to protect their families which was only right. Unfortunately, the Earthborn group as well as the Graylash family were both in as much trouble, if not more so and each had sent out a plea for help.

"Quinn, you finally answered we were just told-"

"The Dalki are already here, Sam!" Quinn cut the other off before he could finish his sentence. "I don't know the exact situation from your point of view, but I trust you to make the right decision. You've always known what's best for the Cursed faction. You've never let us down before, so I doubt you will start now!"

With that the call abruptly ended. Though it was faint, Sam was sure to have heard the sound of explosions in the background. It appeared as the fight had already begun.

'Truthfully, with Helen and Quinn there they already have the biggest support of the Cursed faction.' Sam thought. 'However, no matter how strong they might be, there're just two of them, yet so many Dalki and planets we have to save...'

Death was unavoidable in a war, especially in a situation like this, where they had practically been caught with their pants down. Nobody had ever accounted for a scenario in which the Dalki would have enough forces to attack all of humanity's planets at once.

Of course, the Cursed faction would like to help out their own first, but strategically that wasn't the best option. Should they allow the Earthborn group or the Graylash family to fall, they would become prone to suffering from pincer attacks in the future.

'Have the Dalki hidden their actual numbers, did they find a way to create more or are their forces just too strong for us? Whatever the case, with the teleporters jammed we can only send out reinforcements by ship, but if they are already struggling, it's unlikely that they can wait for us to visit one after the other.'

'There's also a risk that our forces won't be strong enough if we split them up too much. At the moment, both Sach and Owen are thinking about the future, trying to keep as many beast planets in their position to continue the fight in this war. I'm afraid that this might be a burst attack, aimed to deal with us now and in one go.'

'The best course of action would be to give up some of the planets and gather our forces on fewer planets. Having too many territories just thins out our own forces, and if we're really already struggling this much, we will eventually lose those planets anyway. Our priority should be to survive and struggle as long as possible... hoping for a miracle.'

If there was one person Sam had confidence in most, it was Quinn. Perhaps he would be able to win the battle for them at the Cursed faction at the same time, there was another reliable person with him who could command just as well, if not better during a state of crisis.

'Helen, Quinn. I'm sorry but I'm going to have to leave the Cursed faction planets in your hands.'

---

After the decision had been made, the leaders of the Cursed faction had been called for a meeting. The crew on board the ship were getting restless as news was spreading about what was taking place, none of it good.



“So you plan to help out the Graylash faction and the Earthborn group?! I don’t think that will go down too well with the others.” Dennis stated his opinion after hearing the explanation.

“I have already sent a message to Supreme Commander Sach advising him to give up on saving every planet. We need to focus on splitting our own people, and groups into two squads. Nathan, and the two military groups that were originally put under us, you will head to help out the Earthborn planets. Nathan, as a former Head General I trust you to do as you see fit. Go now!”

The military groups originally given to them by Oscar, combined, were nearly as large as the remaining Cursed faction forces. With this it was more of a numbers game rather than strength.

The sit-in was too urgent for them to remain and listen to the rest of the meeting. The more time delayed the harder it would be for all of them. With the order given, Nathan was already heading out and contacting the other sergeants and groups. Soon several ships could be seen leaving the Cursed ship, and those that drifted in space, would go along with them towards the Earthborn group.

“That still doesn’t solve the original problem, if you send our people to the Graylash section they will be unwilling to fight!” Dennis argued. “It might be fine for those from the military since they never acted as a part of us. Their families never moved to the Cursed planets after the groups belonged to us. But it’s different for the others still here. How can one fight when they are worried about their loved ones?”

“I know...” Sam admitted with a sigh. The thing was, as a man who had to look at the whole picture things like emotions, feeling and morale were hard to take into consideration when on the battlefield. Still, he knew that they did have a great effect when one was fighting as well, but it was unpredictable. “The Cursed faction people will be in good hands, just trust in Quinn and Helen. They need to understand, that if we don’t help out the Cursed faction, then we will-“

Once again, in the command room itself, red lights started to flash in the centre. Soon, the screen that was covering the glass window allowed them to see outside. The sensor displayed a large ship heading their way. It wasn’t alone as there were several smaller ships by its side as well.

“Who is it? Have the Dalki come to attack us directly?” Megan horridly questioned.

When the ship came to view on the camera though, it didn't look like the typical black Dalki ships. No, those looked like they had a human touch. It wasn't one of the Bertha ship's either, so it was hard to pinpoint just who it belonged to.

"Move, I'm taking over!" Logan shouted as he climbed up onto the meeting table, and jumped across to the main control centre. The others made way for him to place his hands on the ship. "Activate shields!" Logan ordered the Cursed faction ship and crystal energy immediately created several layers of protection, just in time to absorb the shots that had been fired their way.

As the shots hit the shields the whole ship shook a few times from the great power.

"What's happening? Aren't they humans, why are they attacking us?" Shiro asked. Sil, who was standing next to him suddenly noticed something, and his body started to shake. It was the first time Shiro had ever seen his friend like that.

---

A large man stood in front of a hall of hundred people, his diamond-like armour shining menacingly. His audience didn't look particularly happy to see him, although it could have something to do with their own sad state. They all looked small, malnourished, un-energised and in general a bit lost.

"Today's your lucky day. Those people took something very precious from me and I've come to get it back. You are not to kill any blonde haired people you see on the ship. Doing so will mean that I will make your already miserable existence even worse!"

"However, as for the rest, they must be punished for what they have done! This is a once in a lifetime opportunity for you all. Depending on your performance, I will free you from this place. You will no longer have to remain on my ship and I promise you that our paths will never cross again. As a nice little extra bonus, whoever can subdue this son of mine, will receive rewards that will allow you to live like a king for the rest of your lives!"

A picture of Sil was being displayed in front of them. Hearing this, the eyes of the hundred or so people started to light up, hope visibly returning to them. A chance to escape this living hell where they were being treated worse than any prisoners. No matter what, they would be fighting for their freedom... or die trying!

## My Vampire System Chapter 1194: Another war

Every time the giant Cursed ship would be hit by the beast lasers, different parts of the ship would rumble slightly. However, Logan was doing a great job blocking the attacks.

Although the Cursed faction had plenty of crystals on board for situations such as this one, they never wanted nor expected to get into a battle where it would be down to who had more crystals on board. Without knowing the enemy that was a bad road to go down.

At the moment, using his ability and his eyesight, Logan was concentrating immensely to use the absolute minimum amount of crystals possible. Each time an attack was about to hit a certain part, he would be sure just to activate the shield in that area.

“Why is a non-Dalki ship attacking us?!” Megan screamed looking for an answer but Sam had no clue what was going on, and from the looks of it neither did most of the others in the command centre.

“No, they’re here, now!” Sil said, almost pulling out of his hair.

“Snap out of it kid, you knew this day would come!” Raten shouted.

“It’s the Blade family!” Vorden eventually explained to the others. “I’ve seen that ship before, back on the island it belongs to Hilston!”

A day that a lot of them had expected to come at some point, they all knew the reasons for why they had come. It was, either to exact revenge against Quinn and Arthur, or to get Sil back. The only thing was, Quinn wasn’t here to help them this time.

“The Blades, why now of all times?!” Sam banged his fist on the table. “Is he really that selfish? The whole world is in a crisis and they are still thinking about their own agenda. Is Hilston really that arrogant that he thinks there is no one in the world that can stop him even after being defeated!”

What was more worrying were the little battleships that were heading their way. After Quinn's last visit to their island, most of their personnel should have been dealt with, so just who were the ones currently piloting those ships?

'As long as he isn't dealt with, we won't be able to send support to the other groups. I have to inform them immediately about what's going on with the Curse ship right now.' Quickly, Sam recorded a voice message that was sent out to both Owen, and Sach.

"Urgent report, the Cursed faction ship is currently facing its own trouble. Hilston Blade is attacking us. I repeat, Hilston Blade is attacking us!" Sam shouted down the receiver.

It was enough for the others to fully understand how dangerous the situation the Cursed faction was facing and after Sach and Owen had received the message, they worried that maybe the Cursed faction would soon be the one needing the help.

When sending the message out, there was one more person Sam hesitated to ask for help, and that was Quinn.

'If I ask him to come here, and help us. Would he abandon all of those on the Cursed planets to fight against Hilston. If I do that, then there is a good chance that many lives will be lost. The other question is whether we can even deal with Hilston on our own...but I'm not the Cursed leader. Is it selfish of me to make this decision on my own?' Sam hesitated at the moment.

By now, everyone had already left the room, apart from Logan who was controlling the main ship. Because they knew they had a tough battle ahead of them.

—

Inside the ship, Bonny and Void were busy conducting their interviews with those in the Cursed. Specifically ones that had recently been out on missions. As they wanted to know what their experience was when dealing with those from other factions.

The red alert had been signalled but the reporters were unaware of what the emergency call exactly was, but news spread fast and soon the worries on everyone's faces could be seen.

'A full out war, and they're attacking all three groups at once. I guess since the Cursed ship is constantly in orbit and doesn't have a home planet it settles on, it could technically decide to help any of the groups. Although the most likely choice is to help out their own people.' Bonny thought.

At the moment, she wished she was at one of the other planets, and at the same time didn't. Perhaps it was a sign telling her that she should avoid such a confrontation if she wanted to live.

Instead, all she could do was continue interviewing people and ask them what they thought of the situation, although they were unsurprisingly far less willing to waste any time right now.

"Void, go live." Bonny told her associate.

"We won't be able to edit anything out in that case." Void cautioned her, yet Bonny didn't care and pressed the button to go live herself. As a professional her cameraman shut up and continued to roll.

"I'm sure by now everyone has received the news about the Dalki attacks. I'm Reporter Bonny, currently recording live from the Cursed faction ship, where worries of their families and loved ones are high, I'm sure just like all of you watching too."

The live broadcast wouldn't be viewed by those doing battle, they were unable to, but this was more aimed at the families who were worried about their loved ones currently doing their part to protect them.

Bonny and Void filmed the soldiers that were soon going to go into battle. They didn't bother them as they were preparing, asking Nathan for a few words for the viewers. Everyone was surprised to hear that he and his group were going off to help those in the Earthborn group.

The comments were positive, all supporting them and wishing them good luck in the battle.

As they walked through the main hall of the Cursed ship, suddenly a loud explosion came from their side. The heat could be felt on Bonny and Void's faces. When turning around, they could see the front half of a small ship had managed to pierce the large faction ship, it's front nose damaged and slightly bent.

Nearly instantly as well, small little spiders surfaced around the damaged part of the ship, and the little robots were proceeding to repair it as quickly as possible, in order to equalise the pressure inside the place.

It looked like Logan was on top of things, using his soul weapon.

'How did the ship get past my defences and attacks, it was moving a lot faster than the others. Was that an ability?' Logan thought.

However, the hatch to the ship had opened, and out came a frail human who had dark bags on his eyes, and hardly any clothing or beast gear. A crowd from the Cursed had gathered around, trying to figure out what was going on.

"It's a human." They said surprised.

"I know we were being attacked but I thought it might have been a Dalki with all that was going on. Do you think that they could be V?" Another said.

[Alert, this is a message from the Cursed faction Vice leader. We are currently being attacked by a group of people from the Blade family. They are intruders, with powerful abilities and are a threat!]

Hearing this, those from the Cursed stepped back and drew their weapons. However, it was hard for a lot of them to attack someone, when they hadn't been attacked yet, but that soon changed, as the person lifted his hand, to reveal the floating daggers on each side.

Then tapping all of them, they started to shoot off like a bullet, straight at all of the members around them.

'The Cursed faction are being attacked by the Blades!.' Bonny thought trying to make sense of it all, and the tone coming from Sam didn't make it sound exactly safe either. 'I'm starting to think that maybe trouble comes wherever we are.'

“Freedom...I will earn my freedom!” The man cried out like a maniac, as he ran towards one of the Cursed members that had fallen from his initial attack. Lifting the Cursed member’s sword, he intended to use his powers to increase the velocity of any item. He soon tapped the back of the sword and saw it spinning off again towards the reporter and the others.

Before it could reach, a shadow raised up in front of them, and when it fell to the ground, the sword had been grabbed by someone. The next second, he started to infuse the sword with Qi, and quickly threw it back, stabbing the invader directly in the chest, causing him to fall to the floor.

“Don’t show the intruders any mercy!” Nate shouted. “You’ve seen it, they’re here to kill us all!”

Behind him, were fifty well trained members of the Cursed faction all adapted to Qi training.

“Void, are you getting all of this? We need to keep filming. The situation is getting hectic!” Bonny shouted, as the two of them ran for cover, trying to find a safer place to film from. Zooming in with his camera, that’s when Void could see a strange device that had been dropped by the ship. However he soon recognised it, and a few seconds later, it had created a portal, activating on the spot.

Seconds later, and multiple strong ability users could be seen storming into the Cursed ship, all eager to regain their freedom.

My Vampire System Chapter 1195: The family reunited

It took an immense amount of concentration for Logan to prevent the Cursed faction ship from being blasted out of existence while also keeping the small ships from boarding onto their ship. Nevertheless, one of them had managed to slip through his defenses, by suddenly accelerating at a speed he had failed to foresee amidst his multitasking.

Although they had weapons and small ships of their own, Sam had ordered all of them to stay inside. Their group simply was not suited for space combat, so their best chance at survival was for them to stay inside, especially to deal with any invaders like they had to now.

“I need help protecting the vital area of the ship!” Logan used the intercom to make the announcement for everyone to hear. “I can protect us, but without help I don’t know for how long.”

Logan had to rely on the others to do their part. He had to hope that the inside wasn’t too hectic from the one invader ship that had breached them. He was already using his soul weapon, to repair the ship as best as he could, simultaneously taking control of the turrets on the outside, to fire at any other ships that might surprise him.

Soon though Logan could see a huge problem. Using his powers, his soul weapon he needed beast crystals but everyone was busy doing their own thing. On top of that, for some reason, no one was refueling the beast crystals to power the weapons on board.

‘Did something happen inside? The battle hasn’t been going out for that long, it should be impossible for us to have already run out of crystals! I’ll have to switch to just protecting our front to hold them off for a little longer, but someone needs to investigate ASAP.’

Just as Logan thought this, five more ships managed to bypass his defenses going straight to the back of the Cursed ship, spinning, avoiding the lasers. One of them had been hit on the wing but had crashed on top of the Cursed ship itself. The other four were heading towards the thrusters of their ship. They flew close to the outside layer, making it hard for the lasers to reach them.

Feeling safe, the pilot of the front ship didn’t even register the large sword until it had already sliced his vehicle in half. The one behind it barely managed to evade the energy blast that had been fired off next.

“WOOHOO! I’ll have to thank Longblade and Avion after we survive this! Didn’t think I’d get to use this thing so soon, and this one’s a lot better than the one I used in the tunnels last time!” Fex exclaimed, as his Mech ran towards the other ships with the sword in his hand.

After Logan’s distress call, the vampire had rightfully believed that it would be his time to shine.

---



In the main hall where the first ship had breached the Cursed faction ship, the fighting had turned intense. Although the first enemy had been defeated, out of the portable portal around twenty more had come out, all in similar condition to the first man.

Believing that he and his trained men should be able to handle them, Nate had ordered for the regular members of the Cursed faction to get out and do their best to get to safety, something the non-combatants had gladly complied with. Nate was one of the more trustworthy leaders of the faction on the ship, whose strength was universally recognised since he had taught so many of them.

'We outnumber them nearly three-to-one and it looks like they hardly have any energy to run! This should be doable!' Nate thought as he stepped forward and blasted a Qi powered fist into one of the invaders at the front.

Alas, the next moment he was seen sliding across the floor, albeit hardly hurt. If anything he was confused how his attack could have so little effect.

'What's going on? The combination of my vampire strength and Qi powers are barely enough to move him?!'

Looking at the man in front of him more closely he could see that his stomach had been hardened. It looked nearly identical to the skill that Nate had learned in the past.

'That ability of hardening, it looks like it's stronger than when I used it, but I don't even recognise this person. How could an unknown be this strong?'

Although the Cursed faction did indeed have more people on their side, it didn't take long for them to come to the realisation that looks could be deceiving. Despite their shabby outer appearance the invaders all proved why they had once been considered to be the strongest ability users in the world and why the Blades had bothered to kidnap them.

The hardened one, now aware that he could take Nate's hit without a problem, charged forward once again. When he saw a black sword come swinging at him, he just grinned. Concentrating his hardening ability towards his stomach he felt himself safe, at least until the blade connected and sliced through his body as if it was butter.

A grunt was heard and a large female with horns sticking out from her hair could be seen.

“Layla, what the.... How?! No, when did you get so strong?!” Nate questioned seeing her in her second form, still baffled with how much ease the girl had taken care of the enemy. He had closely paid attention to her during her training before the fight with Helen and he was sure he wasn’t that powerful at the time. What exactly had happened in the relatively short time he hadn’t seen her?

“Thanks for the praise, but it’s actually just this sword that’s a bit special. I’ll tell you more once we’ve dealt with them.”

A small group of Chained were protecting the teleporter, making it impossible for the Cursed faction members to get close. Seeing this, Layla was planning to get rid of them as quickly as possible, but the teleporter activated once again.

“No, is that, it can’t be!” Bonny exclaimed with her eyes lighting up large. The two of them had managed to hide in one of the hallways behind a broken door. It was stuck partially out, so they could continue to film while remaining relatively safe.

Still, the identity of the person came as such a shock that Void nearly dropped his camera.

The large bellied man slammed his two fist together, and flames started to run up and down his arms. “I will be free!” The man proclaimed and those near him repeated it, as if a chant.

Just like all the others he wasn’t any ordinary person, yet the man was special even among the other Chained. After all, he used to be one of the Big Four, Burnie Sunshield. He had gone missing, everyone had long since presumed him dead.

“Layla! It looks like me and you are going to have to take that balloon down!” Nate shouted, slamming his fist together and activating the hardening skill over his hands. Qi wasn’t the only thing he had trained while the others had been away.

---

Elsewhere on the ship, one of the Chained who had walked through the portal had done so while using her invisibility ability. Just as instructed, once she found what she perceived as a safe place away from the eyes of others, she placed down another portable teleporter.

The place she chose, ended up being one of the canteens that were currently empty. More specifically, she had placed it in the kitchen area. Upon its activation four people stepped out of it. A mostly blonde haired man with some grey by the sides of his head in a full set of beast armour, a blonde haired woman, and a pair of blonde twins.

-----

Vorden, Sil, Raten, Shiro, Peter and Borden were currently in the room with the Blade kids. None of them intended to go out, the kids being their clear top priority. Unfortunately there was no good place for them to hide on the ship, so the only thing they could do was attempt to border up and stay in one of the classrooms.

“Did you guys manage to copy abilities off each other yet?” Vorden asked as the children continued to touch each other’s hands sharing their ability. Some of them had brave faces on, while others worried.

As for Sil, right now Shiro was still busy trying to boost his friend’s confidence. His body was no longer visibly shaking, yet this was mainly for the sake of his siblings. He understood that if he continued to act like he had before, then it would make them worry even more and Sil couldn’t do that to them.

“Guys, do you remember how you all felt in that damn temple? Because I remember that suffocating feeling every single day! If we don’t fight now, they will force us to return to that miserable life. I don’t know about you, but I want none of that crap!” Raten shouted, getting his blades ready and not a moment too soon.

The doors to the room were aggressively flung open, removing them from their hinges and swinging outward, but little Borden was able to jump up and grab them making sure they didn’t harm the students.

“Brother Sil, you left us a nice surprise last time. I hope you can come back to us without putting up much of a struggle. We don’t want to hurt you, after all.” Vicky said with a sadistic smile on her face, while her twin brother Pai just harrumphed.

“How dare you bully our little brother?” Vorden asked aggressively. “Tell her, what do we do with those that try to hurt Sil?”

“We pull their limbs apart!” Raten shouted.

The twins were taken aback by this, nobody had told them anything about the Cursed faction having humanoid beasts. Not only that, since when could those talk and since one was Sil related to them?

“Peter, Borden, take the kids someplace else, otherwise they might get hurt. We will deal with those two.” Vorden ordered. “Sil, save your strength until you see him. Trust the others, they are strong enough to help you!”

Peter and Borden clenched their fists and threw out a punch at the classroom wall, breaking through it. Looking back, Sil was wondering if the two of them would be okay, but he had other problems to worry about.

Back in the canteen the portal flickered once more, and a large man in diamond armour stepped out.

My Vampire System Chapter 1196: Not just one

In the main hall of the ship, those that had learned Qi alongside Nate were busy fighting against the Chained that had come through the portal. They were all thankful for having learned the skill, because without it, they would have been seriously hurt and out of the fight by now.

The strong ability users were able to hurt them, but through the power of Qi, they had managed to reinforce their bodies, lessening the blows that they would receive, in turn using attacks of their own. Of course, on top of that, they also had their own abilities as well.

The problem was, the two groups had been at quite the stalemate, but that was about to change with Burnie Sunshield appearing. He had been hailed as one of the strongest fire users in existence. In almost an instant everyone there had recognised who he was.

--

“For those who don’t recognise him, the one who has just come out should be Burnie Sunshield, he was one of the Big Four that had gone missing during the Civil War. The Sunshield family had been annihilated and no one knew by whom.” Bonny reported. “It looks like today we finally got an answer to that. Although they had never been part of it, the Blade family had power rivaling any of the former Big Four, and the Cursed faction are doing everything they can to survive.”

The whole world probably was confused by the situation happening at the moment. Only select families knew about the Blade family’s existence, but it was not something the general populace had been aware of. After what Bonny had witnessed last time she had known a few details and it was her job to report accurately on everything that was going on.

That’s when Bonny heard a large bang, coming from another direction of the ship. It sounded far off in the distance.

‘Have they managed to infiltrate other places as well?’ Looking around, she could see that there was no sign of the boy they called Sil. It didn’t take much to figure out that the link the Blade family and the Cursed faction shared was due to this person.

“How many drones do you have?” Bonny asked her associate.

“I have four altogether, not counting the camera I’m holding.” Void answered.

“Let’s spread them out around the Cursed ship, see if we can find out anything else that is going on. Since we’re already here it’s our solemn duty to show the Cursed faction’s valiant struggles!” Bonny ordered and soon, the drones started to fly up higher, avoiding getting hit as they went around the ship.

--

Burnie’s arms were covered in flames that were constantly spinning like small tornadoes and it didn’t take long for him to figure out which ones would be the best to take out first. Jumping off his short,

large legs, a few sparks of flames were left behind and now coming down upon both of them, Burnie was aiming to finish them off with one hit.

Swinging her sword out, Layla was ready to slash right through the flames and bring down Burnie. At the same time, Nate gathered his strength, and threw out his hardened blood fist. However that wasn't the only thing he had done, before the flames could reach him, the shadow extended from his fist and wrapped around the flames, dwindling them.

'This ability....' Burnie remembered that he had seen it once before. Still, from his elbows, the fire grew larger and strengthened his fist moving it forward with great speed and both of them slammed into the two from the Cursed faction.

Layla's blade had managed to get rid of the flames directly touching the sword, but she still felt them go past her hair and face slightly, burning the surface of her skin.

'What are his hands made of if my blade can't cut through?' Layla was surprised, but could see that Burnie had something similar to brass knuckles on his hand. If her blade wasn't able to cut through it, it meant he had to have similar strength to her.

Even though the black blade had been able to negate the flames, the strength behind the punch had still sent her back quite a bit, tumbling on the floor. As she rolled on the ground, she was quick to get back up.

'Third form!' The bottom half of her body changed to a serpent, and soon she spat the green fire on her burns by her face and sides. Slithering on the ground, she could get to Burnie quicker. Because Nate had managed to match Burnie's strength, he was still in the same position as before.

"Haha, I never thought in my dreams I would get to the point where I could match the strength of one of the Big Four, but here I am!" Nate shouted to hype himself up, both hands held out. He had used all his Qi in his body and his shadow ability to lessen the speed of the flames and the flame man's punch, while the blood hardening protected the outside of his hands.

Both of his legs had sunken deep into the ground, to the point where the flooring panels had been lifted out. The only problem was, he no longer had his shadow to use. Blocking those flames had exhausted nearly all of his MC cells.

Fortunately, he wasn't fighting alone. Layla appeared behind Sunshield, sure that her flame attacks would be useless against him, she decided to swing the blade towards Burnie's back.

"Your weapon seems to be able to block my flames, but it can't block them all!" Burnie grunted, and slammed his foot on the ground. Heat was steaming from his nostrils and in an instant. Fire shot out from his back like a rocket. From the outside he looked like a flaming hedgehog.

The only thing Layla could do was place the sword near her to block most of the flames and cover her body with Qi, but still she was sent back and rolled onto the ground once more, reverting back to her first form.

'We can't beat him, he's too strong. I'll have to take on that form again!' Seeing as her friend was struggling, that seemed like the only choice. Layla tried to think back to the fight against Agent 2 and all the hurtful things he had said... but her mind was going blank.

'What's wrong, why...why can't I visualise it like I used to?'

"You with the strange red hands." Burnie said, as he grabbed Nate's fist with his free hand and pulled it apart. Soon, he grabbed the other fist as well. Now the vampire could feel it, that the temperature was rising in both of his hands.

"Arghh!" Nate started to scream, even with the blood hardening, and his Qi, the power was too much for him to handle. It was clear that Burnie hadn't been one of the Big Four just for show. The fire ability user overpowered the vampire with just his ability alone, but was almost toying with him.

'What is this crap, I can't just watch as someone dies in front of me, just because I can't get over my freaking mommy issues!' Layla was screaming in her head. She could see the negative feeling all around in the room, but still as if a mental block was put on her, she was afraid of absorbing them and turning into that thing again.

Seeing Nate suffer like this, she decided that there was one thing she had to try. She had already tested it on weapons before, but had never attempted to use her powers on a living being.

'I don't know if this will affect me in any way, but I can't just let Nate die!' Layla put on a determined expression as she held out both of her hands toward Nate, and concentrated. It was at that moment that Nate started to feel something aside from the rising temperature. The power in his body was starting to swell. It felt similar to his power, yet slightly different.

'Is this Qi? Just how much power is this?' Turning his head slightly, he could see from the corner of his eye that Layla was on the floor stretching her hand out. This had to be her doing somehow.

Layla had an abnormally large amount of Qi. Not only her own, but her mother had given her powers that had been cultivated over the years. However, Layla's body couldn't handle the enormous strength of power without going to the fourth form.

Still, there was something else she had subconsciously learned to do. Through her telekinesis powers she had been able to infuse items with Qi. She had done so when fighting against Agent 11, powering the broken sword with Qi, to stab through his foot.

Right now, she was doing the same, using her telekinesis powers she was transferring her Qi to Nate. Unlike her, he had a strong trained body in martial arts and was a natural vampire rather than a subclass. Nevertheless, she was worried about the aftereffects this would have on both of them.

Agent 2 had been proof that too much could lead to disastrous effects, but she couldn't hold back too much either.

Pouring the Qi in his hands, and using the blood hardening he had learned, the pain started to lessen.

"Oi, you pompous piece of flaming crap, you've always been the least favourite of the four for me. You always were too hot headed!" Nate shouted as he quickly broke free from Burnie's grip and grabbed the hands himself. The power was a little too much for Nate to handle and his hands felt like they were going to explode if he allowed it to accumulate anymore.

"If all you can do is hold on to me, then this is useless!" Burnie shouted back as he was ready to push forward once more, until shadows rose up and covered both the hands of Burnie once more. However, these shadow's didn't belong to Nate.



“Unlike you and your old bullshit system our Cursed faction doesn’t rely on the strength of just one person!” Dennis shouted, from behind and slammed the black sword he had picked up, through Burnie’s neck. Quickly jumping out of the way, Dennis was expecting a flame attack, but while doing so he threw out a blood swipe and another blood swipe from another direction had come out, hitting the back of the sword pushing it even further inside.

Dennis, had arrived not on his own, but with Megan as back up as well as with Sam. Dennis and Sam both had a strange blue glows on them, courtesy of Layla’s supportive powers.

“How...I was one of the strongest ability users out there...I thought there was only one person who could beat me...how could I have lost just to four nobodies....” Burnie questioned reality, as his breath was dwindling.

“A lot has changed since you have been away. I guess there’s just a lot of strong people now.” Nate answered.

Burnie had been defeated, but the fighting was continuing in the ship. Layla had exhausted all of her powers once again, unable to move from the ground, she nevertheless had a smile on her face, for not letting Nate die. Still, it seemed like this time her abnormal Qi had even affected Nate, since he had almost collapsed to the floor instantly as well.

“Megan, Sam we have to get them out of here, and get rid of the rest!” Dennis shouted.

Sam, seeing how much trouble everyone was in, and knowing what the Blades were like, had predicted this. Their shadow powers were strong but it took a toll on them. If someone else as powerful as Burnie would appear, there was no guarantee they could beat them now.

There was no time for rest, but the world due to Bonny and Void had just witnessed something unbelievable happen. Something beyond their understanding, and it looked like there was more to come, as the drone had entered a training room, where two humanoid beasts were facing off against the Blade family twins.

My Vampire System Chapter 1197: Three Sils

The livestream had shown everything. The reveal of one of the Big Four working with the mysterious Blade family, and as quick as they learned of his existence, they quickly all witnessed his demise as well.

During the time the video was playing, Bonny did her best to inform everyone of who the Blade family really were. A secret family that had ruled the Big Four behind the scenes, the strongest ability users in existence.

After witnessing everything so far, comments were coming in faster than ever under the video.

“Do you really believe that there was this Blade family behind the Big Four?”

“They had the missing Burnie, so it has to be true. Maybe they have Mona as well. Besides, if it wasn’t true this video would have been taken down.”

“Well, who is there to take it down, you have to remember that there is a war going on at the moment.”

“Was Burnie always that weak? Maybe he wasn’t all that. Did you see how the Cursed members banded to beat him. Maybe that’s how he was easily captured.”

“My family has fought against the Sunshield, trust me their power is not exaggerated. If Burnie could have, he would have been able to destroy the whole ship with his flames, but why didn’t they do that?”

There were a couple of things that had led to Burnie Sunshield’s demise. One of them was the fact that he was unaware of their shadow ability and the strange black sword. Both of these things had been able to suppress the power of the flames that would have otherwise killed the others in an instant.

On top of that, any large scale attacks there was a worry that the ship would be destroyed, but their goal wasn’t to destroy the ship, it was to find a certain someone.

“Those other ability users. I recognise some of them. Isn’t that Danny Wang, the famous wind user who went missing.”

“Yeah, now that I take a closer look I recognise a few of the others as well, they all went missing at some point in time.”

The reason why Sam had decided to come to the main hall to help out the others was because he had predicted this. When seeing the ships flying this way, he had been wondering just who could have been piloting them, and the only conclusion he could arrive at were the Chained.

With them on board, he knew the fight was going to be tough. Now wasn't the time for him to sit back and stay in the command centre. Leaving Logan in control and charge of everything, Sam had decided to go out and help. With his own shadow ability and vampire strength he should be able to do something.

Maybe the remaining ones weren't as strong as Burnie, but he knew that whoever the Blade family had kept around would have to have a powerful or useful ability. These were people whose strength would only be second to the Big Four.

“Quickly, move them to a medical bay or one of the training rooms!” Sam ordered the Cursed members nearby. While he swung a blood swipe from his hand, trying to ward off another ability user.

Around him, that's when Sam noticed multiple dead bodies from the Cursed faction. Including those that had learned the Qi powers. With Nate and Layla busy keeping Burnie in check, the stalemate had been broken. Also, looking at the attacker's eyes, he could see it. The hunger, as if they were obsessed with breaking out.

‘Damn it, Peter, where are you! I ...I...need to call Quinn.’ Sam finally decided as he pulled out his mask... unfortunately, his call didn't go through and he could only leave a message. It seemed that whoever Quinn was fighting appeared to take all of the Cursed faction leader's concentration.

‘It looks like we're on our own.’

-----

Peter, with Borden on his shoulder, Sil and Shiro were leading the kids out of the training room and through the halls. They didn't know where to go, but they were looking for the place where there would be the least amount of trouble.

'The others, I can hear them fighting, we need to join them quickly.' Peter thought, but also he couldn't just leave the kids. After all, it was Blade's goal along with Sil and the big bad wolf had yet to show up.

"What are you doing?!" Adeel asked as he stopped and so did the other kids who were following behind the others. "Why are we running away? We can hear the fighting going on, we need to help!"

"You guys are who they're after." Shiro tried to explain.

"And do you think running is going to help?" Adeel replied. "Hilston won't just go after us, he will try to kill everyone in this place. If they are fighting right now, then it should mean that he's using the Chained. If that's the case then, it also means we're the ones most suited to fight them!"

"We grew up learning how to use their abilities. Some of us can copy more than one ability and we've trained to fight against them. The stronger they are the stronger we are!"

Due to the Blade kids' young age, the instincts of Peter and the others had been kicking in, believing that they had to be protected, kept away from the battlefield, but these weren't any normal kids. On top of that they were right. Running away was just stalling for time, when they could be helping fight off the invaders.

"You're right, screw this. Let's go!" Peter shouted, turning the other way, and now was heading towards the sound of where the fighting was coming from. Sil wanted to say something but couldn't so instead he had decided to follow along with the others' and head towards the main hall.

Borden soon was seen jumping down and grabbing something from Peter's pocket on the way down. A green syringe stabbing himself with it, his body soon started to revert to the normal size it once was.

"Come on, let's do this!" Borden shouted.

[Everyone wait!]

A voice sounded through their communicators.

[I heard about what you are planning to, but you shouldn't just charge in blindly without a plan. If you want to face them, you should do it somewhere where you can have an advantage. You should head to the main hall, because it's the safest place. The sensors on the ship indicate that there were more sources that had entered through another teleporter in the canteen area, and they have split up.]

[I can't see who each one was, but two of them have stayed together as they had been heading to the classrooms not too long ago.]

Hearing this, it was easy enough to guess that it was Pai and Vicky. The two Blades they had just seen.

"So the strong ones came in later... which means he might be here as well." Sil mumbled.

[If you follow my instructions I can safely guide you to the hall. I was only able to check now, since the attacks on the ship have stopped, but I still need to remain here to repair the ship as it gets damaged. If the attacks have stopped I can only guess that one of those signals has to be Hilston.]

Even if this was the case. The other people who had entered after would soon join them. If it really was Hilston Blade, then that could mean death for the whole team.

"Wait." Peter said with a big smile on his face. "The main thing we need to do is lure away the ones that are after Sil right. Then I have a plan. Shiro, you take the kids to the main hall. Adeel, I want you to beat the crap out of them all, and leave the others to us."

The next second, Borden felt a mud mask being placed on his face, and his whole image was starting to change. Not much needed to change since Borden looked relatively similar to Sil in the first place. After that, Peter started to transform so he too looked like Sil, making the Cursed faction have three Sils all together.

Shiro, had left soon after, escorting the kids based on Logan's instructions, while the other three needed to decide which signal they would head towards.

"Are you sure this is a good idea?" Sil asked worriedly. "My mother and father are both ridiculously strong as well, and if any of you two were to meet Hilston you might not make it out alive. I think all three of us should head to one signal and team up on them."

"Do you feel like you stand a chance against Hilston in a fight?" Peter asked. The real Sil remained silent, but the one who was actually Borden was nodding away.

"You see, we're not scared of Hilston. With the way you are now, Sil, I don't think you could beat him. Just promise me that if you see one of the others, use them as a warm up, and come save our arses later!" Peter said, running off.

The three of them split up, each heading towards the different signals around the ship. One of them had headed to the canteen and could now see an old blonde haired man with white hair walking there.

Another headed to the entertainment area, where the games would often be and could see a beautiful middle aged woman. Lastly, heading towards one of the other training rooms, there was a man in a full set of diamond armour.

"Oh my, I never expected for you to come to me on your own? What a reunion this seems to be." Hilston said with a smile on his face.

Clenching his fist, and lifting his head, a smile could be seen.

"Come on you crazy old bastard, I'm going to knock your head back a couple of times!"

My Vampire System Chapter 1198: A ray of hope

Out in the main hall things were getting tough for the Cursed faction. While they had initially been valiantly attacking the intruders, convinced that their high numbers would be enough to defeat them, the tides had turned and the Chained continued to push them back for more reasons than one.

‘More and more of them are coming through that damn teleporter!’ Sam observed, drinking some of the blood from his flask. He had overused his blood skills trying to help his subordinates, but to limited effect.

Those around him had switched their fighting styles to a more defensive one, mostly trying their best to survive this battle. Truth be told, if it wasn’t for the Cursed faction leaders being there fighting alongside them, many might have fled, the enemies they were facing were just too strong.

‘They must be the ones in the ships who had been attacking us earlier. Hopefully Logan might be able to help us soon, otherwise it doesn’t bode well for us. Nearly half of the people that Nate had trained have died, while we have only managed to get rid of six of them, including Burnie.’

Thinking about this, Sam was biting his lip. They needed a new strategy, fast. There were still many Travellers aboard the ship, but all of them were weaker than the ones still holding the Chained back. Getting them involved would only increase the bodycount, something he wanted to avoid, if at all possible.

In the middle of his thoughts, an ability user had reached Sam, after having subdued the faction member in between the two. He opened his mouth wide and let out a loud scream that pushed Sam’s whole body backwards.

As a vampire Sam had strength on his side, but his ears were far more sensitive than a human’s, causing him to cover them up with his hands. Not only did it hurt him, but it appeared to have a paralyzing effect on him.

With a spear in his hand, the ability user was ready to thrust it forward, until something whizzed past the two of them. The next second the ability user received a punch in his stomach. The Chained tensed but the blow hardly hurt, looking forward he was unable to see the assailant, but the next second, another scream was let out directly next to his ear.

His ear drum burst open, blood flowing down his ear, he fell to the floor, which allowed him to see that the one who had done him in was but a mere child. Then another one ran up to him, creating a giant fist and swung it down hitting the man's whole head and upper body, knocking him out.

"That's one down, a couple dozen more to go! Come on, we need to help and deal with the rest!" Adeel shouted.

Other Blade kids charged on to the scene. They were working in groups of three, allowing them to display a surprising amount of teamwork.

Adeel was the one who had saved Sam. He had used a speed type ability to quickly arrive at the Chained and hit his stomach. The damage might have been limited, but Adeel just needed to touch him to copy the sound user's ability.

Next another Blade kid who also had the speed ability touched Adeel hand passing on the power, and jumped up to the side of the chained's ear, using the same power on himself. Lastly, one of the Blade's kids with a growth ability created a giant fist whacking the Chained in the head.

"I guess it was actually a good idea we came here after all." Shiro said, lifting Sam up by the arm. The Cursed faction viceleader couldn't quite believe his eyes, but a bunch of young kids were managing to do what a group of trained men had failed.

"You're surprised, right? Well hanging around Sil and Peter for a while I realised something. Even before Raten and Vorden had returned, these kids spent all their time training to fight. Practicing with Raten just made them that much better. It seemed like they had a good base to start with as well." Shiro explained.

Now the tide was once again in their favour. For a second Sam believed they could do it, and he didn't intend to slack off either. It would be a shame, if they let the kids be the reason for why the Cursed faction would survive such an attack.

However, soon three of the Blade kids found themselves in a tricky situation. The trio had charged towards a man with black tattoos covering his eyes, but when they approached him he had been unafraid. The group of kids had remained cautious of him but when they got close, he suddenly dashed



forward and instead of them touching him, he touched the heads of two of them, their bodies immediately sinking to the ground. Their own weight crushing them on the spot.

“What is this? I can hardly move and it feels like an elephant has sat down on me.’

Trying to lift up their hands, they barely could fight it with all their strength before they were pushed down again.

“Oh, so it’s not heavy enough for you. You seem to have the same ability as the Blades but a touch is exactly how my ability activates. They told us not to kill you, but if I die here what’s the point!” The man spoke as he increased the gravity their body was under even further.

Both kids let out a gasp of air, as they felt like their lungs were crushing and collapsing within themselves.

“Let them go!” Sam demanded, and threw two large lines of red aura directly at the tattooed man.

When the Blood swipe was half way, they seemed to hit something and shattered there and then. Another ability user was seen standing by the side, with his hands on the ground. He was the one who had blocked the attack.

‘These people, they’re not thinking straight! They’re mad enough to even kill kids for their freedom!’ Sam thought, but no matter how hard he tried to charge forward, people would continue to get in his way. There was no hope for these two children.

“I can not let such an act happen, right in front of me!” An old voice yelled. A flash of blue hit the tattooed man. It lifted him up into the air, and the attack continued to push him onto a wall. His whole body shaking, foam coming out of his mouth, until the attack had stopped and he was allowed to fall to the floor.

Now standing in the middle of the two kids, his old wrinkled hands could be seen, with blue lightning twirling around his fingers.

Bonny and Void were no longer in the hall, but Void, able to control what was being displayed on the livestream, had switched to the main hall camera, which continued to record everything.

“Hey, does anyone know where I could’ve seen that old man before?”

“That grandpa has a lightning ability, how many people do you know who have it?”

“That’s Grim Graylash, the ex leader of the Graylash family.”

The comments under the live stream continued to flood in.

The old man soon fired his lightning towards two other users who were close to hitting some of the Blade kids.

“Doing such deeds is not worth our freedom. I would rather fight against our captors again, rather than resort to harming innocent kids!” The old man Grim yelled.

Smiling at the situation, Sam never thought that perhaps, there would be those in the Chained that still had the will to fight back.

---

In the canteen, a middle aged man whose hair was starting to gray could be seen. He was wearing gold armour with large oval shoulders. Had a great sword in his hand, making him look like a knight of old that had fought in many battles in the past.

“Sil, you should understand why we’re doing this. You know why we have to listen to him! There is no human on Earth that is stronger than him. You know how things will end if I fight you, Son, so just come with me willingly.”

Clenching his fist, Sil’s whole hand was shaking.

“You’re not the one...” Sil mumbled. “You’re not the one I wanted. That means someone else is fighting against him. I have to... I have to help!”

Not wasting any time, like a flash, Sil moved so fast that his father was unable to see him, the next second and he could feel a strong fist hit him from behind in the back and had lifted him in the air.

It wasn’t just one, but the punches continued to rain down hitting the armour one by one. The armour was strong but it wasn’t invincible. Using the power of six high level abilities at once, and the strength ability, Sil’s hands were out damaging the armour. Blood was coming out from his father’s mouth.

‘The damn kid, he...isn’t like he was before. What did he do to get so strong in the meantime?!’

He moved his hand slightly towards the sword but before he could, Sil was seen above him, and using both hands he slammed down hitting his father to the floor. The next second another kick came hitting him again.

His father could simply do nothing to stop the constant attacks happening his way at him.

“I don’t have time, they need me!” Sil shouted, as he started to imitate the hammer punch of Quinn’s. Stomping one foot on the ground, pulling back and snapping his arm out, hitting his father right in the stomach and sending him flying through the doors ripping them out as he went past.

Not a single hit, Sil hadn’t even been damaged in the slightest, but he didn’t notice because he only had one thing on his mind.

‘I have to go find Hilston, before it’s too late!’

Not being able to move, lifting his head slightly, the middle aged blonde haired man didn’t know where he was, but he knew what had happened.

‘Sil, I wish you luck, because you’re going to need it. Perhaps you can break free from this life that we weren’t able to. I’m tired of this act.’

My Vampire System Chapter 1199: Doom

'This is one of my favourite rooms to be in, it's a shame that it's going to be trashed any second now.'

'Sil' thought inside the entertainment room. It was filled with VR machines, AR games, Block Block, a bar and more.

Standing opposite him was a beautiful middle aged woman in golden armour. From the looks of it, it must have been custom designed, as it was form fitting, allowing for ease of movement.

"Sil, when did you get so aggressive?" She questioned him, convinced that the one before her was her son. "You should know that your little act of rebellion is utterly useless. When has Hilston ever not gotten his way? Just come back to us, my dear son."

Being friends with Sil and related to Vorden, one might think that he would be upset at hitting his so-called mother, but Borden knew the truth as well. Hearing her say such things was making him grind the back of his teeth.

"Son? How can you say such a thing so easily when you know it's not true?!" 'Sil' shouted in protest. "When have any of you ever treated us as family?! Hilston isn't even around at the moment, yet you are still keeping up this dumb act?"

A bulging vein could be seen sticking out from the side of the woman's forehead. One could tell she was angry even though the smile on her face remained. The truth was, she wasn't Sil's mother, nor was she Vorden's, Borden's, Raten's or any of the other Blade kids, as all of them only had one true father and that was Hilston himself. An act that he had forced upon them all.

"You make me sick!" Borden shouted, ready to charge forward, but before he could take even a single step he was hit by a large bolt of lightning. Borden had been able to feel the tingles before the attack had hit him, so he had firmly planted his feet on the floor. Bracing himself, gritting his teeth he had allowed the bolt to hit.

It continued to shock him, and the Blade mother was now starting to worry.

'He's not going down, did he copy a hardening ability?' The Blade mother wondered as she sent out more and more bolts. The Mud Mask disguise started to fall off, peeling from his face, and eventually changing the rest of his body with it, revealing Borden's real appearance. The scales running down his arms and on his head.

The attacks were hurting him, but simultaneously they were releasing a hidden energy inside of his body. After all, the more a Dalki got hurt, the more power they were able to summon. He quickly fought through the pain and dashed to the side, picking up the strange Block Block machine that was the same size as a boxing bag, and hurled it at where his 'mother' was standing.

Stopping her lighting, the woman quickly created a giant fist of earth the size of an elephant and swatted it away.

"You're not my son!" She shouted, the smile on her face had disappeared. Feeling like she had been played for a fool, she was ready to get serious. Following Hilston's order she had held back, not wanting to accidentally kill the boy he was after, but given Borden's current appearance it was impossible to recognise him as a fellow Blade kid.

"Neither is Sil!" Borden shouted, punching through the giant fist causing it to split into multiple smaller rocks. Using this to cover himself he dashed in and threw out another, hitting her chest, sending the woman flying away through the air. However, at the same time she had opened both of her palms, firing out a jet of water which slammed into the three spiked Dalki boy. His body crashed through several of the VR machines and Block Block games until he had hit the bar area breaking all the glasses and stools.

'Damn it, I hope they aren't going to make me pay for all this.'

The woman's abilities were strong, but it seemed like that was really all the Blade mother had going for her. If that was the case then the fight would be easier than Borden had imagined. Perhaps he had thought this too soon. He could see the Blade mother getting up from the ground.

A Dalki's punch was no joke, breaking multiple bones even under the armor. A small bit of blood could be seen coming from her mouth, but the next second the golden armour started to glow brightly.

By the time the light dimmed, she looked to be uninjured, even the armour itself was back in pristine condition.

The active skill had healed all of her wounds instantly.

'That's not fair! Why doesn't beast gear work for me?!' Borden was complaining, but that was when his Dalki senses told him that something was up. He could feel a terrifying presence had arrived.

----

At the same time, Pai and Vicky Blade were fighting against two humanoid beasts. One of the abilities that nearly all of the Blades had decided to take before invading the Cursed faction ship was the lightning ability. Unfortunately for the twins, it proved to be almost completely ineffective against the mud like Demi-god tier beast's body, and Raten continued to absorb the attacks for both of them.

Not only that, but in terms of power, strength and skill, it was hard for the twins to match up. Both of them felt like they were really down to two abilities.

"I don't understand. I was sure that one of them had to be controlling the beasts, but these two are acting fine even with them gone!" Vicky exclaimed in frustration.

There was something else that was bugging Pai as well. Each of the twins was able to hold a total of three abilities, but as long as they held hands together then had access to even more powerful versions of their six abilities.

However, whenever Pai and Vicky would get close, the tailed beast would throw out an attack or charge into the middle of the two of them, forcing them to separate.

Once again, Pai glanced over to hole in the wall, which the others had used to escape. The few times he had tried to get close to it, a giant slash of wind would come at him, and Tails would follow up.

"Didn't we already tell you?" Vorden spoke as he went to punch Pai in the face, which the Blade boy dodged. He grabbed the beast's fist and pulled it forward, intending to knee it in the stomach but before his attack could connect, one of the tails bound the leg. The two of them continued in this fashion exchanging punches and kicks, blocking none of them using an ability as they got swayed in the middle of combat, until.

“Vorden? Am I dreaming, is that really you, but how?” Pai questioned.

Vicky on the other hand, was still firing off her abilities at the Demi-god tier beast, struggling to face what she believed to be the stronger of the two opponents.

“Has that thing hit your head? How does that thing look even remotely similar to Vorden?” Vicky shouted.

However, Pai could tell. Back when they had been living in the castle, they would fight multiple times, and Pai enjoyed teaching Vorden how to fight. Since Vorden would be in control of Sil’s body most of the time and Vorden wasn’t the best when it came to fighting. It had almost become a routine for them and from the way the Emperor-tier beast fought, he could tell.

“Since you know that now, let’s stop this, Pai. I know you still care for Sil and us, so why are you following his orders?” Vorden asked in the beast’s voice.

Hearing this, and distracted even Vicky and a slip in concentration allowed for Muddy to make a cut across her forearm.

“Damn you!” She shouted leaping back. “If that one’s Vorden, then this f\*cker must be Raten!”

It was at that moment, that Vicky realised something was up as well. No beast should have thought like this, and even the weapons that were muddled looked more like beast weapons than anything.

“It can’t be...” She froze, but there was no time for chatting, as a red signal was flashing around the whole Cursed ship, and soon it was starting to shake once more.

---

In one of the other training rooms’ Hilston could be seen with his hands held out, pointing towards ‘Sil’.

“You dare to call me crazy?!” Hilston shouted as he had stretched out one hand. “The real Sil would never have such guts! Apart from your sharp tongue, you don’t seem to have much else going for you, though!”

“I always enjoy seeing someone proud kneel down before me.” Hilston commented as Peter’s body did the gesture without his will. “Telekinesis is commonly regarded as one of the weakest abilities out there. Even the strongest users can’t do much due to the limitation of their MC cells, but for my Blade family it’s no problem.”

Peter struggled, but only resulted in him moving slightly. It looked more as if he was shaking in fear more than anything. He knew a bit about Hilston’s ability from Layla. She had once described it to him as moving an invisible force. If one could break free from it, then Hilston would have to locate him again to use it, shooting out the invisible force.

“If Telekinesis really is that strong, then why the hell did you still lose that fight back then, huh?” Peter taunted him. In that moment, using all his strength, activating the beast gear he had, the Wight broke free from the power pushing off the ground.

It felt like he was pushing against a solid steel door but he knew that for a brief second after saying those words Hilston should lose concentration.

‘Quinn has been doing what he can to grow stronger, just so he can deal with people like him. It’s time to show him that I’ve been getting stronger as well!’ Peter thought as he dashed forward, and was now by Hilston’s side.

“You have no idea.” Hilston harrumphed, as he simply moved the back of his hand. Peter was confident in his strength, he was confident to have grown alongside Quinn’s strength but something had played in his head.

‘Protect the head’, a lesson that had been ingrained in Peter for a long time ago.

At the speed Peter was travelling at, if his punch wasn’t able to overpower Hilston’s back slap, then the slap would hit his head. Knowing this, Peter changed his punch, and pulled out the tonfa that were kept by his side, lifting them up.



Immediately, the tonfa broke and the next second, he could feel the bones in his arms crushing, as he was flung to the other side of the room, embedded into the wall.

“Thank you for reminding me, but I won’t make that mistake again.” Hilston said, as the armour on his body was slightly glowing.

It was at that moment, that all of Peter’s confidence in winning this fight disappeared.

‘This guy....is a monster. He’ll kill everyone.’

The room started to flash red constantly, and the entire ship started to rumble. Then it started to shake to the extreme. Explosions were going off in different areas.

‘What’s going on? The attacks should have stopped by now! Did... did one of my tools dare to betray me?!’ Hilston thought, rage on his face visible.

Soon though, a loud bang sounded directly from above them, parts of the ceiling fell to the floor, and then an equally loud bang was made as something had hit the floor. Peter, looking towards what had just landed and caused all the noise. All he could see at the moment was an incredibly long looking tail, black in colour.

My Vampire System Chapter 1200: One of them

With the simultaneous Dalki attacks going on everywhere, all three main factions were suffering. The battles that were being held in space, soon went toward the planets. It seemed like the Dalki weren’t really fond of space combat either as they believed in their own physical prowess.

It had been the same back during the first war. A large mothership, black in colour but odd shaped like a blimp had been used to reach Earth. Whatever attacks they had used against this mothership had been ineffective. Once that large ship had been close enough, it had fired out several black pods to invade their homeplanet.

It was nearly the same this time, the main difference was that the pods were landing on the beast planets instead. Having to evaluate everything that was going on was Sach, the new Supreme Commander. The giant Bertha ship had drifted towards the centre most planet of all those that belonged to their group at the moment.

'It's just like before, even after several years we are unable to create anything that can damage that damned ship. They aren't exactly holding themselves up in those either. Are they pursuing an overall goal by taking over the beast planets or do they just do it, to cut off our resources?'

"Jane, have there been any reports about any strong signals, or any sighting of Dalki four spiked or higher in the Earthborn group?" Sach asked, listening in to the constant reports that were coming from each of the planets. Not one of them was doing well at the moment. The silver lining was that they were able to hold their position, but for how long? A week, a month? That wasn't even accounting any rogue elements...

"Negative, none of the leader type Dalki as you refer to them have shown up on any of our planets. However, I feel the need to point out that there are those struggling more than others. Planet Caladi didn't have any strong forces stationed there since it's been classified as a green portal planet."

"Careful estimation predicts that they won't be able to last to the end of this day until they are taken over. Their leader has already requested help from the Cursed faction. I got word from General Nathan that he should be arriving soon with two army groups. Should I send them to reinforce Planet Caladi?"

Thinking about this, Sach was wondering if there was any point fighting for Planet Caladi and a few other green portal planets. They made for ideal living areas for the humans and also good training spots, but they were also planets that strategically speaking could be called expandable. He also had the words of the vice Cursed faction leader on his mind.

With all the other planets struggling as well, Sach had to agree with Sam's suggestion, they couldn't save them all...

"Tell Nathan and his group to escort everyone from Planet Caladi to one of these planets." Sach ordered as four planets lit up on the screen. They were close to each other, and had high tier beasts. They weren't exactly safe for civilians to live on, but in such a critical time they couldn't be too choosy. The military needed to concentrate their resources and protect what was most important.

“When he’s done on Planet Caladi, I want him and the two army groups to continue with escort duty. Assign him two of the Bertha ships and get as many people off those planets as possible, before you bring them here.”

Jane saluted and immediately proceeded to send the messages out to all the others but there was something worrying the Supreme Commander. Sach was sure that the Dalki were smart enough to launch a simultaneous attack on all of their planets, they might also have information on what planets were most important to the humans. In turn they would send strong forces to make sure to get rid of them.

Perhaps, they might have even predicted their current course of actions, but it was all the better for them. The Dalki would have to leave behind a token army if they wanted to claim each of those beast planets, causing humanity to fight against fewer Dalki in the end.

Unfortunately, they had yet to see any Dalki leaders, so where were they?

After Jane had finished sending and giving out the orders she looked back at Sach, noticing he wanted to ask something.

“According to our reports, which planet is currently facing the most trouble? All of the Shelters on them are A rank, so there shouldn’t be too much difference. Unless there is a terrain issue.” Sach asked, hoping he could perhaps pinpoint the location of them doing this.

“The planet that is struggling the most is Killor. It’s a red portal planet that is mostly covered in snow and forest. However the terrain shouldn’t be a problem and actually the forces there are greater than anywhere else.” Jane reported.

“Greater there than anyone else? Is the faction living there particularly strong?” Sach was a little confused.

“No, that is the planet that Head General Samantha is currently on. She has taken some of Oscar’s strongest people with her, yet they are struggling more than any other.”

That was the answer that Sach was looking for. This was the planet that he needed to be at the most.

--

The large Bertha ship stayed in orbit away from the four planets. If one was to look through the glass in the command centre they could see two of the planets in the distance in view. If they zoomed in, they could also see two of the Dalki mother ships.

They would often stay in orbit after dropping the black pods. Seeing this was also the confirmation that the Dalki forces far surpassed humanity's expectations. When they had come to attack Earth, there had only been one of them.

Sach had just landed on Planet Killor. He had made sure to arrive on a part of the planet, where no battles were taking place. Since the fortresses were well guarded and stronger, ability users were prepared to fight off the Dalki. Seemingly realising that, the Dalki would come in groups to test certain things, and after a short battle retreat.

Once he arrived at the Shelter, the first thing Sach noticed was the state of the east wall. It was worse than he had thought. There was a large hole that had been slightly fixed with the Earth ability. In its current state it wouldn't even hold against the weakest of Dalki attacks.

Bunkers had been built a few hundred feet away from the Shelters as well. He could see scout groups heading out and returning, but the worst thing was that snow around the area was covered in blood. Red blood.

His first destination was wherever Samantha was. A soldier quickly pointed out the way and on his way Sach was wondering one thing. Was the fact that this planet was performing worse than the others related to the Dalki focusing more effort into it... or was this a result of her not really being in the right state of mind?

Reaching the north wall, he could see Head General Samatnha there, in a makeshift tent, looking at a digital map at the place.

"Supreme Commander Sach, I'm sorry that I couldn't greet you when you were coming in, but we are in a dire situation." Samantha reported as she briefly looked up, to which he just replied with an 'At ease'.

Coming up to the map, Sach looked at everything it displayed, which was the locations they had seen the Dalki. She wasn't the only one in the room. There were also four strategists of war, they weren't great in strength, but had helped Oscar many times.

"Perhaps you could shed some light on our situation. Whenever our scouts have discovered a few Dalki scanning out the area, we have followed them, only to end up led into a trap time after time. No matter how cautious we are, or how we change up our tactics, they managed to trick my man!"

"At the same time, even when badgering up, and moving our defences to one side of the wall. It's as if they know which wall we borrowed our powers from. They seem to have great insight into our moves."

Now, Sach understood how the wall had been damaged, if the Dalki were coming from the west section, then Samantha needed to make the choice to reinforce the wall with troops from the north, south or east walls for support. She had done so from the east wall, the wall furthest away, and yet somehow the Dalki had been ready with a strong force attacking from there.

"Am I the issue?..." Samantha couldn't help but ask it out loud. It wasn't as if she was unaware, that what happened to her father had messed her up. Usually she would be quite good at tactical warfare, being even more alert than Sach.

"No, the issue isn't you at all." Sach said, pivoted his foot and swung his other leg out, slamming it at one of the strategist's head, hooking him by the back of the neck. With sheer power, he brought the man's head down and pinned it onto the ground.

That when they could see it, while the strategist was stuck under Sach's foot strugglin his eyes were glowing red.

"He was a...V?" Samantha realised. "But how did you know?"